ABEL vs. CAIN:

The Road to Redemption

written by:

Michael J. Neeley Jr.

They say that CAIN caught ABEL playing with loaded dice.....

The Grateful Dead- Mississippi Half Step

EEEEYYYYEEEE, can't stand it. I know you planned it. Imma set it straight this Water Gate…….

The Beastie Boys- Sabotage

Feeling uninspired – I think I'll start a FIRE…….

Stone Temple Pilots- Half the man I used to be

Life is a beautiful struggle……

Swollen Members- Brand New DAY

What if God were on of us, just a slob like one of us. Blue Blue blue blue blue blue blue, blee blee bleeeeh – I wrote that.

DR. EVIL – The spy that shagged me – What if GOD were one of us

Oh give me the beat boy's and FREE MY SOUL, I want to get lost in your rock in roll – and DRIFT AWAY……..

Bob Seger – I wanna get lost in your rock n roll

This book is dedicated to:

Margaritte, my first fan, with her word "I couldn't put it down."

Thank you.

The Public Libraries of West Virginia.

The people that have helped along the way of this very long and winding road

The City of Fairmont

And the Fabulous WHITE'S of

West Virginia.

)*(

Not to be forgotten - the homeless Vets and homeless People of America. Citizen.

Never give in.

In the United States of America there are 3.5 million "homeless people" – there are 18.9 million vacant homes. –

-Huffington Post, circa MAY 25th, 2011
My name is Mikel Neily, and I have seen with mine own eyes the size of "the relative". I know exactly how small "WE", every single one of us and the "relative" is. It is literally the size of a grain of salt.

It is amazing and beautiful. I have never seen anything so small, or so beautiful. We are literally ONE speck of sand on a mighty big and vast beach, of creation.

And we exist inside of the “relative”.

The relative is our UNIVERSE. Inside the relative – our universe; is also another ----- **16 BILLION more galaxy’s.**

We live in one solar system, within one galaxy, with 16 billion other solar systems and galaxy’s. The scope of its value is immeasurable.

We are hardly insignificant to ABEL, Infinite LOVE, GOD - and to myself.

To think that this battle for this seemingly tiny piece of property, on the beach of creation, this thing we call “LIFE” - the existence, known as “the relative” - this battle has gone on

forever - would only be telling half of the story.

I will do my best to tell you the rest of the tale as it was interrupted when I was finishing the last story – the Reckoning. I will finish NOW what I missed putting into The Reckoning. And the story continues to EVOLVE.

This is what happened after the story of the
Reckoning was published – as best as I can recall.

)*(

8

Chapter 1
The First Days are the Hardest Part

Pt.1

The city of Tucson, April 20th, 2016 –
Downtown Central Library –

That night at the vortex –

MIKEL, do you trust me?

I guess so, ABEL.

I'll accept that. I'll accept that. MIKEL, I want to show you what I look like. What I truly look like. I want you to see me for who I am. I am more than just your soul. You have your own. I am just a soul mate, stuck inside of you and, also, a silly battle between my brother and I.

And I want you to see me for who I am. I thought that this would only be fair, for you to see who I am.

I know I talk tough. I have to. I am the General Death of TWO army's - so I have to talk tough and be tough. But while I have this moment with you, I want you to see me for who I truly am. I want you to see me, so it helps you understand why what we are doing, and "why" what we are about to do - is so important. Are you ready, MIKEL? Don't be surprised.

- And suddenly, before me stood a 9 foot tall cartoon image of a young boy with brown eyes and messy brown hair. He was very tall, and holding my hand. I was too amazed to scream or do anything. I just sat there looking into ABEL'S brown eyes as he held my hand.

I told you, "Do NOT be surprised". This is what we look like back home, MIKEL. This is what I look like as your soul.

MIKEL, a very, very long time ago, we had to go through a black hole, and our flesh didn't make it. We lost our flesh. But, MIKEL, I feel this very deeply, we are about to win our flesh back. We - you and me, just have a few more steps to take. Tonight's step being the first, very important, step to take.

What's that?
Well, tonight, it would mean getting the BANKS to pay a bet. That's never been done before.

ABEL? Is that - is that really you?

Yes, MIKEL, I am just a boy. Barely 19 years old in your ages. But I am AGES old, MIKEL. Millions of them. My brother CAIN and I have been at this battle for eons.

I am the first and only HUMANOID demigod ever created with brown eyes - I was created in your image, and as you can tell, like you, I am out of place

amongst my people. But I am also a PRINCE.

Like I said to you before, we had to get the entire empire through a black hole. The flesh wasn't going to survive. So the creator consolidated the flesh into just one tree. As the story goes, my mother and father were banished after four bytes were taken from this tree fruit. But they weren't banished, MIKEL, they were escaping. LIFE is an escape from DEATH. GOD is LOVE. The "banishment" wasn't a punishment. It was an escape, from death and wars amongst other Gods. There is much I cannot tell you. I can't tell you everything, not just because of the rules – but because it would be an impossibility. It would be impossible to tell you everything.

Now, MIKEL, since you know what I look like, and have heard what I am fighting for - will you allow me to invite CAIN down here? It's prophecy MIKEL. It is

time. And you are the one to do it. The only one I trust to do this.

I thought this to be fair - the only way to be fair - after all I have asked of you this winter. It’s also the only way to turn off the Apocalypse Weapon, MIKEL. You and I are human, MIKEL, everyone else, as you can recall back home, is something different.

- The town clock of Tucson chimed ELEVEN. -

It’s time MIKEL. I have to get back inside of you now, and you and I are about to make history. Again. MIKEL, you are my best friend.
You have given me so much. I will repay you.
And I know you can do this. I KNOW YOU CAN.

All right BANKS, he didn’t take the bribe. It’s prophecy. It’s written down. It’s in the rules. We have to follow the rules.

That’s in the rules. It has to be done, and it has to be done this way.
SEND HIM DOWN. SEND HIM DOWN RIGHT
NOW. There’s no other way. There’s no getting out of this, BANK’S. A deal's a DEAL.

And within an instant I began to feel as though I were being filled from the inside, as though I were an empty vessel. Filled and pushed to a breaking point.

I can’t do this, ABEL. He’s too big for me. He’s going to kill me, ABEL. ABEL make him stop.
Please make him stop. This hurts me. SSTTOOPP TTHHIISS. Stop this now. He’s killing me.

You can do this, MIKEL. I would never get you to do something I know you cannot do. Hold on. He’s almost all here.

I’m going to be crushed ABEL.

My jaw felt like it was going to crack when he got to my mouth. My eyes felt as though they were about to pop out of my head. Blood started to come from my tear ducts when he got past my eyes. And when he reached the top of my skull, I felt as though it was going to crack open, and I thought I would die. ABEL. ABEL. I can't do this, he's too big. I'm going to die.

Yes you can, MIKEL. I know you can. MIKEL, please calm down. I know you can do this. I know you can. We are almost finished.

And then the tears came. These weren't my tears; these were tears of fear and shame. My body started to shake and convulse.

Brother, what's happening to me. My body, it's shaking. What's happening to my eyes? Brother I'm scared. Hold me.

Welcome to Prison Earth, big brother. Welcome home, King CAIN. We have a lot to discover. Rise and shine sunshine.

It’s time for you to take a little walk around the good old prison Earth.

I didn’t know it was mother, ABEL, please believe me. Please believe me. Please…please…., BROTHER, forgive me. It was a mistake. Don’t make me do this. DON’T MAKE ME DO THIS. I didn’t know it was mother. Don’t make me do this, I can’t be here.
I’m KING.
I believe you big brother, I do, but we - you, have to do this first. You’re not a king here,
KING. Here – you are MY inmate. Don’t you forget that either, CAIN.

Brother, what’s happening to me? What’s going on? Why am I shaking? Brother - brother - hold me, I - I don’t know what’s happening to me.

Those are their “emotions” CAIN. I’ve told you about them. I told you, they feel everything we feel, But they feel our feelings a thousand times more than we feel them. It’s how their body responds

to our feelings. It’s an emotion, CAIN. That’s all it is.

You have to get a hold of yourself, KING. I am with you KING. CAIN, listen to me, MIKEL – he was born into this prison, why don’t you be as big as MIKEL. Be as big as MIKEL is right now. MIKEL’S not afraid to be in this prison. In fact MIKEL calls this prison HOME. You remember HOME don’t you?

What’s happening to my eyes?

Those are tears CAIN. It’s called crying. CAIN, you think you don’t belong here – don’t you? I understand. We’ve never had the KING of KING’S here on prison Earth before. This is your first time being here since the war between us began.

But, CAIN, let me ask you how many of your tears are for what happened between you and mother, and how many of your tears are because you are afraid.

CAIN remained silent.

That’s what I thought.

CAIN, we were born here. THIS IS YOUR HOME. Welcome home big brother. Welcome home KING. Let’s be a big boy, get up, and take a walk. Rise and shine sunshine. It’s time to take a walk. It’s time to take a walk, CAIN.

Pt. 2

My name is MIKEL, and I guess I should fill you in – just in case book 3 is your first book you’re reading in the series of Abel Vs. Cain. I don’t truly know where to start; it’s all been so odd. No less than three years ago I had a really good job and worked very hard. I had a two bedroom apartment, car – life operated very normal.

And then on April 1st, 2014 my neighbor's apartment caught on fire. The fire spread and destroyed ¾ of the entire building before it was extinguished. This caused me to become homeless, and I lost everything – home, job, car.

I stayed around Phoenix for a while, almost two months, trying to piece my life back together on my own. I gave up on the idea when an angelic voice told me to move to Tucson. This angelic voice I have heard and followed all of my adult life. This is and was the voice that had kept me out of a wheelchair for life, and I was always raised to trust in God and do as God says. This voice had never let me down before, so even though I was very reluctant in doing so, I decided to once again trust in the Lord and follow His advice – and moved to Tucson.

I had just completed a school for HVAC training so quiet naturally I expected work to follow. However, nothing panned out. I looked all over Tucson for work and old friends, but I found nothing. I had no idea why the Lord had brought me here to Tucson. And then my 45 birthday happened. I was living under a bridge
– again – after suffering years of homelessness from a divorce. And now this time from a house fire. I just couldn't do this anymore. I was mad at the Lord that had brought me here, the hard times had turned my family against me, "we don't want to talk to you till you're on your feet. Until you have a job house and car and money – do not call us. We don't want to talk. Your kind and my kind don't talk." This kind of talk from family makes you want to give up. So I decided to commit suicide.

I survived, or in fact quit trying, because while in the process my father had called

me on the phone. I hadn’t received a call from my father in 10 years. I thought for sure he hated me. But he called me that night oddly enough just before the final fatal shot I had prepared for

this moment. He told me he loved me, and I told him I loved him. We didn’t talk long, but it was long enough to make me stop.

I have a bad knee and I twisted it over the course of the night. I got stuck under that bridge for an entire week, I couldn’t walk anywhere. On one of the last days, that Angelic voice took on a shape before me.

Years before Phoenix, before Tucson, I lived in Humboldt County California. – doing my best to stay relevant to my daughter’s life. In Humboldt another odd thing happened to me, which is how

these three stories' came to be. I had been given, without my knowledge, a bunch of PCP – 10 grams – and this event caused me to crack. Under all the pressure I was dealing with far from home, new life and the child being taken away – plus my broken fire career, I snapped.

But before I totally snapped I ended up in a hotel room with a guy that was in a wheel chair. As soon as we sat down, I started calling him CAIN; and he started calling me ABEL. We talked for four hours about all sorts of things. But the oddest thing was "not destroying the humans." This is how all of this started. I didn't mention any of this to anyone till I wrote my first book The Awakening. When the Lord showed up, once again my soul ABEL awoken and he and his father talked for hours.

I’m as human as you are – I rationalize, deny and debunk most anything I do not understand or that is unexplainable. But these events with ABEL, ATOM, and CAIN cannot be denied. Each of the events lasted for hours and even days after ABEL could talk to, or through me. Both events lasted days even though they were years apart.

When ATOM’S visit was over, ABEL woke me up out of a dead sleep, and we started writing The Awakening. Thirty days later, and using the rest of the money I had at my disposal, I published my first book – ABEL vs. CAIN: The Awakening. Because of the annual Tucson Gem and Mineral Show, after 90 days I had one copy of the book on six different cotenants. This was all ABEL’S doing, and doing this had destroyed a 300 thousand year old spell on the Earth.

I was very proud of myself, and thought it'd be a while before I had enough imagination to complete another book. On the night of publication, I was hit in the head with a rock in my church parking lot while I was on my way to my friend Robert Johnsons house.

What happened next I could've and would've never imagined on my own, ABEL, my soul, started the Apocalypse. At first I thought this was just a joke. That my mind was playing tricks on me. But then the vortexes started to open. The ground will start to shake when a vortex opens. Reality will crash into them. For a guy like me who's never been in a vortex or even in control of a vortex – it can scare the hell out of you.

And in the meantime, ABEL conducted his Apocalypse, and my life became very scary. I was raised in the church and always taught that people that channel

spirits were fakes, and that vortex weren't real. But the events before me made it perfectly clear to me that these things are very very real.

Which bring us to where we are now. In order to turn off the Apocalypse Weapon, and because ABEL would have it no other way, CAIN, his brother would have to descend. And by descend I mean descend into me – my body. In short, on this night, I was literally filled – and almost killed – with the HOLY SPIRIT of CAIN.

There are two verses in the Bible. You can find them in Romans. They are in chapter 10. They are verses 6&7. Each of the verses talks about an ascension and dissention in order to bring Christ back to life from the dead. I didn't know this at the time, but like the experts say, "we are living thru the end of times."

And I was in the midst of fulling prophecy. Tonight.

This is the best I can do to catch you up, if this is the first book in the series that you've started reading. I started this book Road to Redemption with the left out chapters of the
Reckoning. And I write this day February 1st, 2018 – this story is ever expanding developing and growing. But let's take it one chapter at a time, and let's see if I can explain some of the really crazy events I have endured just to bring you a book you can enjoy. This should get you caught up.

Chapter 2

Don't you worry any more

The city of Tucson, April 20th 2016

Downtown Central Library-

Meanwhile at the vortex-

CAIN, I want you to know that I forgive you. It’s taken a long time, yes it has. But I have forgiven you. I have forgiven you, brother. Mother forgave you too – so just know you are forgiven, KING CAIN. We have to do this. And we have to do this – this way. There is no other way for me show you what’s being done in your name. You have to do this.

CAIN had fallen from grace at the vortex at the central Library in Tucson. I was his vessel. His brother ABEL was consoling him. CAIN was afraid and ashamed – I could feel it. His fear.

His shame. His quilt. I could feel it all. CAIN’S descent hurt like hell. I thought I was going to be crushed. Blood came from my eyes, and my jaw popped and just about snapped.

CAIN, do you want to know “when” I forgave you, it was during MIKEL’S ascension. There I was, and the crowd was beating me. Trying to kill MIKEL. And you stopped them. You yelled, ”Hey!!! That’s my BROTHER!!! You can’t treat him like that!!! My brother is royalty!!!” – That’s the very moment I forgave you completely. I knew then I hadn’t lost you completely. I love you brother. I love you CAIN.

But CAIN, why didn’t you think about MIKEL. Why didn’t you think about yourself – MIKEL is your creation. Why didn’t you say, “STOP!! That’s my creation!!!” There’s no need to answer, I just wanted you to think about it.

MIKEL is one of your creations, CAIN. And he did what the others thought was impossible – he ascended. He should’ve been welcomed. They said it was impossible, but he did it. And when they

attacked him, you didn’t stand up for him. But thankfully, you stood up for me, and I lost all my resentments against you, brother.

I’m sorry Brother.

Don’t apologize to me. Apologize to MIKEL. Without him none of this would be possible. Without MIKEL, the other human’s - and this relative and this galaxy – YOUR CREATION, would have been destroyed by now. CAIN, this place and this relative is great. It’s nothing to be ashamed of. I’m going to show you around. I’m going to make you proud of yourself, I promise you that. I promise you that.

CAIN, as you are MY INMATE, do not expect me to go easy on you. So, GET UP INMATE. IT’S TIME TO TAKE A WALK. Don’t worry it’s late, we won’t go far

today, but in the morning I have lots to show you, King.

I want to meet the man **MARK BITCHUP** that ruined a 300 million year universal domination plan.

Oh, that's just not going to happen, CAIN. Mark Bitchup lives in Eureka, California. We are in the city of Tucson, in the state of Arizona.
California is thousands of miles away. California would be an impossible walk and we don't have time. So we are going to spend, however long you can stay, right here in Tucson – for now. I have lots to show you.

Get Mark Bitchup, and any resentment you have against him, out of your mind. You have to be with us, here now. Trust me brother, I have lots to show you.

For now I just want to take you to MIKEL'S camp and get some rest. You have traveled very far. And I want you to know, I am proud of you – I am proud of you INMATE CAIN. CAIN, MIKEL will do most of the work for now. You just relax and observe. That's all I want you to do. Ask questions if you like. But at this moment, we are off to bed. Let's go.

CAIN, inmate – we have to go get some sleep. I have so much to show you. And the day hasn't even begun. The light, THAT is your inheritance, hasn't even begun to shine. You've never even seen YOUR LIGHT, the light H.E. created and has given you.

We are in the darkness right now, receiving light from the BLACK SUN, the light you are used to. But I can assure you, you will be amazed in the morning. We, you, me and MIKEL – are about to go and get some rest. You have never done this before, and the humans have to do

it. So you, SIRE, are about to take a little nap. Do you understand?

Yes.

What's that you said to me INMATE?

Yes, SIRE.

Do as MIKEL does CAIN, that's all I ask.

Why are you being so hard on me?

Why am I being "HARD" – on you? Who hit me in the head with a rock? Again? Who started the Apocalypse? Who did

that, inmate? The APOCALYPSE is what got you here, inmate.
That’s why you are here, KING OF KING’S.
Not exactly my entire fault……. this time.

MIKEL, let’s go home – WALK INMATE – walk – CAIN, MIKEL will do most of the hard stuff for now. But, SIRE, I will expect you to pay attention and learn. That’s why you are here. You are here to learn WHAT being a human is like in a kingdom honored with your HOLY name. A prison kingdom honored in your name, mind you.

- NOW WALK INMATE.

MIKEL, if you will – would you take the KING
OF KINGS TO OUR HUMBLE ABODE.

Brother, let’s talk. I will talk you will –

- Listen.

CAIN, this isn’t about MOTHER anymore, this isn’t even about me being right, and you being wrong - win at all cost, as per usual. This is about DEMOCRACY. Not just our democracy, here on this planet, but the entire galactic republic’s democracy.

We both have “children”, if you will, that we created to battle each other – some have dissented. Or stopped fighting all together – or just don’t agree with us any longer. We can’t forget them. We created them.

CAIN, you cannot have a diplomatic solution to a seven house problem when six of the seven don’t even exist, CAIN, that’s NOT a “diplomatic resolution”.

That’s NOT a “democracy”. That’s tyranny.

We owe those whose only crime is that they evolved faster than you and I a little gratitude.

These children of yours that run things, the management, banks and institutions - don’t even exist as a voter, but call all the shots anyway, and take as much as they want without giving. Your “children” – the chosen ONE’S - even divide the last house into a useless one percent, and senseless banter arguments and fighting.

I already know “where” they learned this from,
but CAIN, you cannot “RUN” a “DEMOCRACY.”
This thing called the “RELATIVE”, is about existence on a level we don’t understand yet. AND IT’S **“RIGHT**” TO BE **HERE**, BE **LEFT**

ALONE and not destroyed because of our
“little battle.”

And, it’s my hope, BROTHER, that one day, when we are both at home, and we look out into our horizon - we will see a **red star**,
WHICH SIGNIFY’S A TIME WHEN WAR WAS
THE ANSWER – the only answer - AND WE LOST A GREAT CIVILIZATION, knowledge and planet, AND a **white star**, so many white stars, who were ascended and gave up much to ascend. Destroyed in our battles.

They sought destruction to the aggressors - (not knowing ALL THE FACTS) in vengeance – They did this by breaking the order and procedures of our republics democracy, on both sides, and - finally, up in our sky there will stay - a **blue star** - one who’s diplomacy stood the test - and we will forever know - as we look upon the **red star**, the **white stars**, and the blue star - that we

almost lost our democracy - but instead, quit fighting, quit manipulating and quit running the show - let democracy speak, let diplomacy live, and WE picked our republic backup and held it together, for everyone else to see and coexist in - forever in eternity.
I want this star to be a reminder, that at one time in our own galaxy, we ourselves, almost lost our very own democracy. By fighting.

This has nothing to do with me, or mother, anymore - BROTHER. Not anymore. And I wish I could get you to see that. Now I know that when MIKEL and I ascended, and you saw them beating MIKEL, had that not been me, would you have stopped them from continuing? Your exact words were, “Hey that’s my brother”; not stop that’s my CREATION.

Something to think about, because now we
“know”. THE HUMANS CAN ASCEND. EVEN

IN THESE “DIRTY BODY’S”. THEY NO LONGER NEED SAINT OR IMMORTAL STATUS.

WE WERE WRONG.

Let’s get some rest brother. Thank you MIKEL. This is MIKEL’S home. Not nearly as royal and grand as you are used to, but MIKEL makes this tent his home. So let’s get some sleep.

MIKEL, this is the KINGS first attempt at sleeping – I’m just warning you. You remember what your daughter was like in the early days; she had to learn to sleep. So, I assume this might go the same way. Just be prepared MIKEL.

O.k. BROTHER, we are about to close our eyes and lay here quietly. It’s called sleeping. And I love to sleep. But this is your first time. So you do as MIKEL does. He will be the left side; you will be the right side. All you have to do is imitate

him. Ready? O.k. MIKEL, get some rest – good night KING CAIN.

TEN MINUTES LATER -
YOU HAVE TO SHUT **YOUR EYE, KING**.
He can't sleep with one eye open – CAIN.

But I've never done this, how do they do this?

They just do. They have to. It helps them retain energy and feel better. CLOSE. YOUR. EYE.

ALL THE WAY, CAIN. That doesn't count. MIKEL, I'm sorry. CAIN!! You shut that eye or I will kill you now, just because I can. DO IT. SHUT THAT EYE – all the way.

But I can't see anything……
That's the point CAIN. That's what they do. That's how it's done. And they need rest every night. SO YOU WILL SHUT THAT EYE ALL THE WAY. DO IT!!!!

CAIN, that doesn't count. It has to be all the way closed.

Why do they do this?

Cause the have to CAIN. That’s just what they do?

How do they do this? They have to do this every night?

CAIN, I’m about to kill you and start the Apocalypse just to get you to stop asking me all these stupid questions. I CAN’T TELL YOU EVERYTHING. Demz duh rules!!! So do as MIKEL does and stop talking, and SHUT – THAT -EYE.

All the way, CAIN. All the way.
Like this?

Just like that, CAIN. Now meditate.

Pt.3 I want

my chocolate cookies now.

NO.

I want MY CHOCOLATE CHIP COOKIES.

CAIN, you are an inmate. You are a prisoner.
There will be

-NO-

Chocolate Chip Cookies

I want my chocolate chip cookies.

NO.

I WANT MY CHOCOLATE COOKIES!!!!

I said – NO.

I want my chocolate chip cookie, and I want them now.

NO, CAIN, you are a prisoner – you are my inmate – you will not get any cookies tonight. Go to sleep.

MIKEL – GET ME SOME CHOCOLATE CHIP COOKIES. NOW!! OR I WILL STOP YOUR HEART.

That’s enough inmate. Now settle down.

MIKEL, you will get me some CHOCOLATE CHIP COOKIES – NOW. I

want my chocolate chip cookies. I need my chocolate chip cookies. I eat them all the time. DO IT MIKEL,
DO IT NOW. I COMMAND YOU TO GET ME MY COOKIES!!!!

CAIN, stop it. You are not getting any cookies.
–

I will stop your heart MIKEL –

And he did. My heart stopped. And I couldn’t breathe. He was choking me.

CAIN, you are a prisoner, inside of a prison – you are not a KING. And you will let go of MIKEL. You will do this now. You will do this right now. OR I WILL KICK YOUR WIMPY ASS TO DEATH. DO IT INMATE CAIN. AND RELEASE MIKEL --- NOW.

He let go of me, but for 45 seconds I thought “this is it for me, I’m gonna die.” Over cookies. Cookies I could not afford – even if the world depended on it.

CAIN, you are not acting in a way that is fitting of a prisoner. You’re acting like a spoiled child, just like a KING would. That is why you are here. You act, as if, only what you want is what we all get – we come from a democracy, CAIN. A democracy that you claim is here on Earth; but you and I both KNOW that it is not – unless you agree with the vote. That’s not a democracy – that is tyranny.

We are not eating chocolate chip cookies tonight because MIKEL cannot afford chocolate chip cookies, he has no money. MIKEL is broke. Your “chosen ones” won’t let him work because his house burned down and he is now homeless. No-one gives a homeless

person a job. I’m sorry, no chosen one gives a human a house. Not anymore.

He is more than qualified to do any type of work, but he is also a human. So therefore, he is broke, homeless, and you’re not getting any cookies tonight because of this, caspice? Your royalty means nothing to the cashier.

Don’t you ever try to kill MIKEL – EVER AGAIN; or I will kick your wimpy royal ass, and I will take my time doing it. I will kick your ass for so long that you will beg me to nail you to a cross like you’ve done to me countless times.
BAD INMATE. No touchy touchy MIKEL.
Caspice – KING?

He’s broke?

Yes. He has no money to buy you any cookies.
He will buy you cookies when he can afford cookies, I promise you that. I promise you that – KING. Do you promise not to do that to MIKEL ever again?

Yes. SIRE.

Good. Now, sleep, inmate. Got to sleep, KING CAIN.

CAIN, I have it within my power to destroy everything. And I will destroy all of it – everything. ENOCH, ELISHA and all your other trouble making friends and creations and save you for last.

Three days from now, MIKEL will have enough credit on his social security EBT card to buy you some cookies – I promise, we will get the cookies as soon as possible. Till then you will have to

ween yourself off of them. I now this is going to be hard for you as a king that gets his way all of the time; but CAIN – MIKEL and the other humans NEVER get their way anytime – something to consider as their creator and KING. Your management has it set up this way CAIN. You will just have to comply. Good night, KING.

Thirty minutes later –

Oh, this is worthless. CAIN, that was not “rest” – that wasn’t even a “nap”. That does not count. But I will let you make it this time.

What’s a “nap”?

One of my favorite parts of being a human, big brother. MIKEL, CAIN is divine at the moment. He has never

been human before. His divinity should carry you pretty far. I know you didn’t get any rest, but MIKEL, do you think you can handle a day with his holiness?

I think I can. I’ve done it before when I worked fire.

Thatta boy, MIKEL. Let’s go get some coffee. CAIN’S never had coffee before.

Chapter 3

When Life looks like easy street

Pt. 1

The next morning on the North Side Church facebook page appeared –

Dear Pastor Alice - So I heard you need “one more sign”. And I have told you once before there will be no more peaceful signs. But I jest- I will allow one more peaceful sign. No-one will die- this time. But you bother me ever again, and it will be certain doom for someone.

I’m certain, because I have heard you say this, that you know we are to become the Body of Christ. And I am also sure that you are aware that there are 9 planets in your solar system.

These 9 planets mean something, watch.

SUN – every man was once somebody's son.

VENUS – women come from Venus, but no girl becomes a woman until after birth. - Venus

MERCURY – when a woman starts to give birth she gets a fever, without Mercury we wouldn't be able to tell hot from cold – and when a girl gets that fever, she will say "ME- ER- C- HURRY" – Mercury.

EARTH – a woman will lose her water just before birth, the Earth is the only water planet in this solar system. - Earth

The **MOON** – after birth you will need a cat, cradle, silver spoon, because a little boy will grow up just like the man in the moon. - Moon

MARS – men come from Mars, without Mars there'd be no battle of the roses, no red checks or red noses. – Mars

JUPITER – without Peter and a King of the Jews we wouldn't know that life is precious and life can be a really big gas – Jupiter.
SATURN – It's good to sat, it's good to turn, it's good to return and life can be a three ring circus – Saturn.

NEPTUNE – Life's no fun without a nap and tunes puts the baby to sleep better than anything else. – Neptune

URANUS – Uranus, urine-us whatever you call it Uranus reminds us that it is good to move things out and life can stink sometimes.- Uranus

PLUTO- You're going to need a good dog to watch over this family, because life without a dog is no fun. – Pluto.

These nine planets tell the story of the gestation period of the Christ Child – the body of Christ that we are to become. Each of these planets represents the

nine million of your years it takes to produce the body of Christ. This CHRIST CHILD is an embryo inside of a uterus, and currently hasn't even been born yet. If you ever feel lonely or like there is no-one there, that is exactly what this fetus goes through too. All alone, in utero.

Does it ever seem that no matter what you do, LIFE goes in a downward spiral; well we were creating the umbilical cord for this CHRIST CHILD. So Life does go in a downward spiral. That was not your imagination.

I know it's probably not as magnificent a sign as you might've wanted, but this is what you get from me today, Pastor Alice. This is your sign. I can hear you now, "Oh that MIKEL. He is just so clever." More clever than you obviously, let's keep that in mind if that is something you want to say about your sign; or even your next sign.

Look, Pastor Alice, I’m really trying to keep as many of you alive as possible. I’m not trying to destroy the place. I know what the Bible says about me, but have you seen what it says about not killing? It’s wrong what it says about me, I love you humans and this Earth. I want to save you, I’m not trying to destroy the place – but I have a job to do and a reputation around here that I have to think about. We can play “I need another sign” all you want to, but I still have to do my job. Please keep this in mind. Or better yet, just ignite that faith in your job, and religion. As in NOW!!! – This is really important.

Share this with as many people that will listen, because we are having a baby!!!! And I really need you to help me get this LOVE LIGHT on.
Time is wasting and we are in a hurry.
Pastor Alice, that is all – yours truly General DEATH.

_____ Pt. 2

The next morning – early in the morning, very early in the morning; at MIKEL’S camp site near the foot bridge by the sacred Santa Cruz wash-

CAIN, that wasn’t sleeping. That wasn’t even a nap. That was pathetic, but MIKEL can probably handle it – he used to fight fires and worked many a long shift. Can you handle it, MIKEL?

For you, ABEL, anything.

CAIN’S divinity should carry you a long way MIKEL, but we are still going to live like a human does. Let’s go get some coffee MIKEL.

CAIN, we are about to drink some coffee.

But I don’t like coffee. I don’t like the tribes that do like coffee.

CAIN, MIKEL drinks coffee every morning. He will kill someone without his morning coffee. Caspice?

MIKEL will kill people without coffee?

No, not really – but he could, I’d let him, so we’re going to get him some coffee. CAIN, it is 4 a.m. The city is asleep, the way you should be. What you see around you is not what I wanted to show you. Everyone is still asleep. CAIN, MIKEL smokes a cigarette every morning. So you are also going to smoke a cigarette. This is how MIKEL starts every morning if he can.

But won’t that give me cancer? My management tells me that smoking causes cancer these days.

They put that in there. We’ve been smoking for thousands of years. You’re not going to get cancer from smoking just one time. Besides, I don’t think that the sacrificial lamb of the Apocalypse really needs to worry about “dying” from cancer – do you?

Smoke up Johnny. Smoke it like you mean it CAIN, you started this habit. The humans were just imitating you back when you and your friends smoked – that’s where they got the idea from, lest we forget.

Thatta boy, big brother, smoke up. What do you think of the coffee?

It’s not bad.

Not bad? Oh CAIN, that’s poor man’s coffee.
That stuff is bad. But it’s all we can get at 4
a.m. in the morning. But I’m glad you like it. CAIN, humans are warm blooded. They need the coffee to heat up their bodies. The management mocks the humans for this. The management claims that a poor person, which is a human, cannot get coffee on his social security food stamps because this would ruin the economy, send the world into chaos. The management won’t even let a human buy hot food with the welfare.

While a corporation that receives the same type of welfare in the millions more, mind you, can get a hot steak dinner and a lap dance from a stripper. All on the people’s dime. Corporate welfare can buy a lot more than a

humans welfare. That’s not exactly fair, CAIN. This is what I brought you here to see for yourself. We have the wrong people in charge. Like I said before, it was a once necessary EVIL. One that is very un-necessary now.

And, as it is written, when salt loses its saltiness – it must be returned to the sea.
Demz duh rules. And we gotta follow the rules.
That’s in the rules.

Now, CAIN, I want you to notice how the light in the sky is starting to change. Do you see it?

I do.

That means that the sun is coming up. Soon the sky will be full of colors. You

will be able to see the color of your eyes, for the very first time. Mom's eyes are coming up. And when it's all done, there will appear the sun that gives the Earth its light. This is called a "sunrise". And it's my favorite part of the day.

Look – those are the colors of mom's eyes. I miss her eyes. These lights that you see all around us, those are called "street lights". Those are not going to stop the mother ship. They're just not bright enough. I will give it to the management that they have tried. But they haven't finished the job correctly. It's my opinion that it's a leadership problem, which is why you are here now.

CAIN, now that the sun is closer to rising, you can see your eyes. That right there is the color of your eyes big brother.

Impressive. That is what mine eyes look like?

Yes, that is what your eyes look like, big brother, we can’t get rid of this place. You’ve never seen colors like this before. What do you think about the human eyes?

They are brilliant, ABEL. So many colors. And I can see – far away.

That’s called distance and perception, big brother. You can also see patterns and shapes with the colors. These eyes are not like any other type of eyes in our kingdom, and I love them. They are amazing compared to where you and I come from. So see, the managements not completely failing. They did do a few things correct, and these eyes would be their greatest accomplishment, in my opinion.

Brother, what is this creature? It’s the most amazing thing I’ve ever seen.

Oh, CAIN, you don’t want to know how they treat those things. It’s called a fly.

But it has the green and gold colors of Azguard, wings and red eyes – why is it

called a “fly”? A moment later

– OH.

Because “LAND” was already taken, big brother. We evolving land dwellers, CAIN. Fly seemed only logical.

I can’t believe this little place is so big?

So big? CAIN? CAIN, we are not “BIG” at all.
Wait. I know what you are thinking. You think - you think - this is it. You think this is all there is. You think that you are ON the relative. But, CAIN, do you remember all those tiny lights in the sky, when it was normal and DARK to you and I? Those CAIN, are stars, and they are seemingly very, very, very - far away - we could never walk there. They are furthur than California from here.

Listen, see that speck of dirt, that CAIN, is the size of the relative - to us. But this place, this is a planet, it rest inside of a solar system, which is also inside and only one small part of 1 galaxy, That galaxy is within one universe, which that contains 16 Billion other galaxies - This planet is just one very small part of a galaxy. And we can fit 16 BILLION galaxies inside **one** speck of sand, CAIN.

That speck of sand, CAIN, contains 16 BILLION galaxies - and we are on 1

planet inside of one solar system, inside 1 galaxy, inside 16 billion galaxies, inside one speck of sand - TO YOU and I. But right here now, to them, they seem - as it also seems to you, very big.

What?

Oh yeah, you are beyond molecular at this very moment, brother. In fact your 100,000 times smaller than a molecule, possibly even ten thousand times smaller. We've destroyed so many in our fight - we truly don't know just how small we are. NOT YET.

But it looks so big.

It is big, CAIN, to them. Timmy got the message, CAIN. Now you know why GOD is so good - she's got to stay in front of TIMMY.
This is TIMMY'S best work, if you ask me. Don't you think so? Look at it. All those colors are about to change again. Go from blue to opaque, to bright blue and

white clouds. Get ready for this. It’s gonna be a good long and terrible day. Your first. CAIN, you have been born again. Enjoy the curiosity, but CAIN, I can’t tell you everything - caspice?

Why?

Cause you are my inmate, and I am making you look at dirt all day long. I want you to try and count all THESE TINY INSIGNIFICANT SPECKS OF DIRT - that were just like this one, that YOU - CAIN - THE GOD OF DESTRUCTION, have destroyed to hide MIKEL, and your shame - FROM US, back home. Walk inmate, now. Don’t you look at another thing till I COMMAND you too inmate, understood?

Yes.

Yes what, CAIN. Imma about to kick your ass?

Yes, sire.

Sorry brother, but this is important. It’s important to me. It’s important to TIMMY too. It’s important to MIKEL, and it will become important to you - if I don’t kill you first for asking dumb questions.

I love you brother. You have already done much much much more than I ever thought possible. Walk Inmate, now move. MIKEL, if you will, do not look at anything else till my brother, the God of Destruction - can finish counting to 18 infinity.

TWO HOURS LATER -

O.K. CAIN - the place is starting to wake up. See look. They’re everywhere; let’s take a break from counting specks of insignificant dirt for a moment.

What are they doing?

Everything.

Where are they going?

Everywhere.

Why?
Cause they have to do everything your “chosen ones” - “won’t” do for themselves.

Like what?

Pick up the trash, answer the phone, kiss their ass, work, eat, cook, cut the grass, pump the gas, drive the car, and serve the food - you know the important things that REALLY need to be done. What do you think?

They’re too busy to get the love light on.

AAAAAHHHHHHHH. How’s that counting going? Make it to a billion yet?

No.

No, what?

No, sire.

Make it to a million yet?

No, sire.
Good, cause we ain't even close to a Brillion yet are we, which ain’t even 1/18 of the way to an infinity, is it?

No, sire.

Can you tell me the number AFTER a Brillion?

I – I can’t.

You can’t? You better get this right before I kill you inmate?

I cannot - SIRE.

Do you know why? Because MIKEL has never heard of it before – he's never even imagined the number after a Brillion. But CAIN get this - neither have they, but they have heard us talk about infinity, and they are searching for it. Creating it. CAIN, they're making a different reality, just to find infinity. That's the level of greed and ignorance the BANKS ,
MANAGEMENT and INSTITUTIONS have. O.k. let's take a break from counting sand. Take a look around. What do you see, or better yet - what don't you see?

Where are the animals?

Oh, you noticed that? Yeah, the horses have been removed, and replaced with those things. This is where it started with X-71.

What are those? Those aren't horses?

No. Those are cars, but they have horsepower, if that makes any difference.

How?

That’s another good question, why don’t you ask them. Check this out - you wouldn’t believe this, cause I know it looks like there are all different kinds, but they are all almost all the same.

What’s the difference?

The value.
What?
Well, see that? That is a truck, see that one over there, that’s another truck - but one is 4 times the value of the other. Does the same work, if that guy ever worked at all - while that guy there, you can see, works all the time. And get this, the worker one uses more costly gasoline.

What’s gasoline?

Gasoline, or oil rather, is what the humans kill each other over, or the management has the humans to kill each other over – gas and oil is what the management tells you WHY humans won’t stop killing. They manipulate them to kill, and then report to you that humans killing each other cannot be stopped.

What?

Yeah, how we gonna get them to stop killing each other - when they don’t even admit they're here. We don’t get the awakening, and the love light on with just one tribe - that is not the deal. But look, CAIN, we aren’t totally screwed, so don’t give up yet.

Listen, MIKEL, feels everything we feel - even if we don’t think we are feeling anything. They feed off us, as soul’s and spirits. We never knew that. We never even knew that the humans have their own souls. And if it weren’t for the hard

work from our loving mother, I wouldn’t even know it either.

What is that? Is that a machine?

That’s a good question, CAIN, it’s not alive - I will tell you that. Touch one. Don’t be afraid. See, it - won’t bite you.

Listen, now you know why we are having “That” problem back home with X-71. This is where and how it began. And you know what sucks; see that one, that one, that one, and that one? All are the same type, but each are different. They let the “machines”, as they call them - evolve, and say evolution does NOT exist. Now you can kind of see the beginning of the problem, cause this is it.
The management denies everything. Don’t share anything. And won't allow anything that I like, or you need, to get released or evolve - unless it suits their needs and purpose. I have a hunch CAIN; I need you to see something.

MIKEL, can you make it the prayer garden? I know we are a few miles away, but CAIN ain't even made it to a BRILLION yet, and that's nowhere near 1 infinity, and my BROTHER – Mr. God of Destruction, has to get to 1 infinity before I can show him anything else.

Why does it look like this?

Like what? You mean where are the cities of glass and crystal? Well, they are not up here, I can assure you that - since I personally built one and showed the management how to build the others, in a deal we made a very very very very long time ago. They are not here, almost like they have another idea. Survival. After something bad happens here, "Mr. I hate them all they must die". Listen, you feel that?

YES, SIRE.

MIKEL needs to use the bathroom. You're gonna piss your first pee - pee, CAIN. Ready?

Where does he go?

In this town, one like many that don't **like** "his kind", anywhere he can, CAIN?

Where's that gonna be?

Mikel?

Right here.

HEY!!!! He has the- the mark ---- He worships Satan's helpers, he's got the mark, he has the mark of the beast, he hates gueers.

CAIN, no he doesn't, but yes he does. And NO he does not worship Satan's helpers or hate gay's- which is what they like to be called now. He is not homophobic.

Why does he have the mark of the beast then?
They put that there at birth. They start the trauma - AT BIRTH, and carry the torch and abuse them, for the rest of their lives. They're stacking the deck, CAIN. You got the wrong people in charge, CAIN. I am glad you noticed that, now pee. And hurry, MIKEL, can't hold it. He is not the type that can. MIKEL, help him please this is embarrassing.

Why is his …..

Why is his stream of urine different? Cause he has been a human longer than a few hours, CAIN, and has learned to do it. Brother, you will be able to urinate before I let you leave. Sorry about the stain, MIKEL.

It's the desert; it'll dry in a minute, ABEL.

Nice job MIKEL. Love this boy. Now walk inmate, and don’t you stop counting till we get to a BRILLION.

Pt. 3

In Tucson Arizona, is a public prayer garden, the Garden of Gethsemane. Inside are a group of life size alabaster statues.

Upon arrival……..

I brought you here to show you something, CAIN. The management hasn’t totally messed up everything. Look. They love you, CAIN. They love Jesus Christ. They haven’t totally got it - ALL WRONG. Did they? They serve you - they serve your dead crucified body - look at it. There it is? Doesn’t the sight of this just over whelm you with pride?

Oh, man. Oh, man. Shit. They’re going to do it again.

What’s wrong CAIN? Don’t you like seeing your dead body being worshiped? CAIN, you're not happy to see yourself slaughtered on a cross - again? Or, for the - not yet to come?
I told you brother, I don’t trust them. I think they’re planning a coup de ta. Making old mistakes better, the second time around. And getting everything they want - your death. And them, all of them, all of the humans they can take. If you know what I mean. Doesn’t this serve “duh lord”.

Get me away from here.

No inmate, we are going to go over here. There is Mother.

Brother, I need to tell you something. I know you will never - possibly never, believe me; but listen - the first time

MIKEL heard an angelic voice - he was 12. He had learned about the word “soul mate”. And his father is very religious. Very religious. All of the South is. Which is why MIKEL stays away from the South- among other reasons. But he was looking thru the Bible - searching for answers the way he was instructed, and a voice came over him. First time ever.

The first time MIKEL ever heard an angelic voice come over him, he was 12. He had just learned about the word “soul mate”, and was looking inside the Bible for answers – just like he had been trained. And suddenly a voice came over him, a female voice, and said, ”Don’t you worry, little one, your soul mate will be born on Halloween.” That’s all the voice said. CAIN, MIKEL heard the same voice when he took the RFID chip out of his body. Accept this time there were two voices. One male, the other female, that said, “Now I can help you.” She has risen CAIN. Mom’s not dead.

You’re crazy BROTHER. I killed mother.

I’m crazy? MIKEL? –

Yes, Lord, it happened. I can’t deny it. I looked for the Halloween girl for a very long time but after 11 years I gave up. Did my own thing, blew it off. Then on the first night I met my daughter's mother, I asked her what her birthday was. It was October 31st. My immediate response was to politely walk where I could talk to GOD alone, and I said - “YOUR
CRAZY, NO WAY, TOO YOUNG. NOT MY TYPE. NOT GONNA HAPPEN. NO WAY, NO HOW. YOU’RE NUTS. But turned out I was wrong.

CAIN?

I - I still don’t …….I don’t believe it. She’s dead. I killed her.

Don’t know what to believe? Well if it makes you feel any better, MIKEL has never believed in vortexes, the BIBLE, or

even CHRIST - and he received CHRIST last night, before he ever believed in you. Now he can’t deny you, or that you're too big for comfort. You have to relax brother. You’re crushing him with your emotions.

CAIN, they feel everything we feel 100 times more than we feel them.

CAIN, would you like to cry a minute? Cause I want to teach you where you might have gone wrong. Don’t cry here. Let’s go back to where MIKEL sleeps. You can cry there. Home, MIKEL. And don’t let him cry till we get home. Not yet. I have to teach my brother something important.
As we walked along the Santa Cruz bike trail to my campsite ABEL spoke to his brother.

CAIN, when you are a DAD, or a FATHER, or a LEADER, you cannot show weakness. I did not say you cannot have weakness, all I said is that you cannot

show weakness. You can be weak, for a moment, but you must be weak - ALONE. You are the leader, and if you ever show weakness to your forces, they will crumble. That includes your mate, children, and soldiers. CAIN, hold it in till I say when, this is exactly what you need - and do not take your eyes off that dirt.

I think in the early days of your dread, you cried too often in front of Elisha and Enoch. It's only an opinion of mine. But, CAIN, as a leader – you have to maintain your emotions in front of your forces. Never cry in front of anyone if that's possible. You are the leader.

O.K. brother, now that we are home, go ahead and.....cry. Let it out, big brother.

CAIN, I mean Jesus Christ, cried for over a half of an hour. This was no ordinary cry. We cried hard tears of sadness. He was ashamed of what he had seen in his name. The cities of glass were not here,

as he had been told. The management was not sharing the transport gates, and the value system was all wrong and disproportionate to what he had intended for our evolution. It was all wrong.

I’m sorry, MIKEL. I didn’t mean to cry that long. We don’t treat our prisoners like this. This isn’t the way it is back home. We don’t treat our prisoner’s this bad, MIKEL. I am ashamed for what is being done to your people in my name. No matter what I had planned, I based those plans off of what I had been told. I’m sorry to have cried for so long, MIKEL.

Don’t worry about it, LORD. It’s O.K. LORD. Seems like you needed it - to cry like that. LORD, I gave my life to Jesus Christ a long time ago, so if you needed me, in order to cry, its fine by me LORD.

MIKEL, this isn’t what I intended for your people. I never – I have been deceived, MIKEL. Your kind are not supposed to be

treated like this, not this badly. This is not how we treat prisoners back home. And then there was the statue….
I thought you'd like that.

I – I am amazed. ABEL has told you about the mistake my management team made with Jesus of Nazareth. I thought they had learned. But I can see they only intend to make, as ABEL would say, old mistakes better next time.

How do you feel, big brother?

Refreshed. Sad. Relieved. Crying is not what I thought it to be, thank you little brother, for showing me "how and when" to – "cry".

That's the healing power of tears, CAIN. Brother, humans cry for all types of reasons, the best and most rare is tears of happiness, but it happens. Tears are very healing, CAIN. And you just cried your first set of tears. I am proud of you

brother. See Mr. “Know it all”, it’s impossible to know it all. You learning, CAIN. See, big brother, “learning” and “discovery” can be fun. Even the hard lessons.

_____

Pt.4

Earlier that month, before CAIN’S fall from grace, while I was sleeping at the campsite near the foot bridge in Tucson –

Get up MIKEL, no time to explain, we gotta go.

I had been in a deep sleep in my tent by the
Santa Cruz wash in Tucson. MAYHAM was in a hurry to get me awake.

What’s going on?

Get your shoes on MIKE. We gotta go. You know what? Forget the shoes - MIKE, hurry up, and hurry up fast – we ain't got time. We in a hurry, MIKE.

HOLY COW MAYHAM WTF IS THAT?

That's what we running from, MIKE. RUN. Forget the shoes MIKE, we gotta hurry. Imma teach you something –

When I saw what MAYHAM had woken me up
for, I began to run. I began to run as fast as I could – behind me the entire world was collapsing into an abyss. Everything was being crushed and sucked into a great unknown. It was a terrifying sight to behold.

Run faster MIKE, gotta stay ahead of that abyss to win, MIKE. Now, MIKE, you've

run races before, and I can't tell you everything, but tell me – how did you win all those races as a kid?

I crossed a finish line, MAYHAM. MAYHAM we ain't gonna make it. Where am I running to?

The finish line, MIKEL. The finish line.

Where's it at?

MIKEL, you are made in the image of God, create one, silly. I can't tell you everything – but call it out, say "when I cross this line I win." And cross the line. Times almost up MIKE. Hurry up before we lose.

I ran from the corner of Mission Lane to the corner of 19 Street next to Motel 6 and Highway 10 in Tucson. Behind me

entire houses, trees, sequoias, and the River Park Inn had all collapsed into the abyss. Gone.

The sight of this carnage had my heart racing with fear. I was literally running barefoot as fast as I could. When I got to the corner where the Motel 6 is I finally understood what MAYHAM was telling me. Make a line. Create a line.

So I found a line and,

I screamed,-

“When I cross this line I win!!!!!”

Instantly everything that had been destroyed by the abyss was returned to normal. The quiet of a Tucson 3 a.m. returned to the way it was before MAYHAM woke me up.

EEEEWWWWWWEEEEE, MIKE. Good job. We got that one. Sorry to wake you up. Let’s go smoke a joint. You did a good job.

I don’t have a joint, MAYHAM.

You don’t? What’s this behind your ear? Boy, what else you hiding behind your ear, MIKE?

MAYHAM.....

._____ **Chapter 4**

There is danger at your Door

Pt.1

That night at the vortex – a few weeks earlier.

ABEL and I had transcended space and time. Where we went I'm still unsure. All I know is it was my foolish mistake. I asked a stupid question. I had asked ABEL what would happen if I didn't run the next time the vortex opened, and now I know what would happen.

I am home, I am home, MIKEL. HOME, sweet home. MIKEL, thank you. MIKEL, I'm so glad you ask stupid questions. MIKEL, I wouldn't be here without you. Just look at the place, I have been gone a very long time.

Where are we ABEL?

Well, this is my home, the Kingdom of Darkness. This is my house and I haven't been here since the protest started. See all the activity, MIKEL, we are not alone in the Universe – are we?

ABEL, is that elephant drinking an espresso, in a suit and tie?

Most likely a republican, MIKEL, don't stare – it's not polite. And yes he does look to be drinking an espresso in a suit with a giraffe drinking beer in a Hawaiian shirt – oh, and look at that. Someone is hitting the sauce early this morning, as per usual.

ABEL, is that cone sphere cube THING – drinking the Bloody Marry – is that "thing" giving you the bird?

Don't be silly MIKEL, that's a "shape"; not a "thing" – and it does seem as though she is giving me the bird. Nice to see someone finally recognizes me. I was starting to feel like a stranger in my own kingdom. My own castle, even.

MIKEL, you can tell that shape is a girl, because of the cones. Let’s just say I was never good to Geometry, MIKEL. She’s probably still mad about all the x’s I put π in her place. MIKEL, we better get out of here before she tells anyone else I am here. We’re finished with the Galactic Council. Hurry, MIKEL, Geometry has a very large family, to sum it up.

On our way back through the vortex -

Whelp. There it is MIKEL. Ain’t she pretty? That’s what all the fuss is over. Look at it.

What’s that, ABEL? The Earth?

NO, silly, that there is the “relative”. One speck of sand in a mighty vast – mighty big beach of creation. I’m pretty certain

we wrote that down somewhere. TWICE, I think.

Did you think we were joking? That's your home, MIKEL. That's your UNIVERSE. The entire enchilada. Every galaxy, star, planet and solar system that you know of – and the ones you haven't discovered – all of it – fits into that. We have fit 16 BILLION galaxies into that. See why it's so important.

THAT?

Yes, THAT.

HHHHOOOOEEEEE – LLLEEEEEEEE-SHIIIIT, ABEL –

We call this place the closet. But I like your name for it, because that's exactly what it is, a bunch of our Holy Shit.

NO, ABEL. I mean Holy Shit – all this – all this
"other stuff" – ALL OF THIS, used to be like THAT? - LIKE THAT? - BLUE??

Uh, yeah, well, sorta. Some were other colors, MIKEL.

SOMEBODY'S GOT A BAAHD HABBIT – it's ok, ABEL, you can talk to me. I used to be addicted to drugs, I can relate. OH MY GOODNESS, ABEL, it goes on forever. LOOK AT THIS.

Uh –

EEEEhhhh - EEhh - EEEEhhhh. Don't talk to me right now. - SONOVABITCH – Did you ever think….did you ever think - about stopping – I don't know – sooner? I mean, OH my goodness, ABEL. VAST? You should've said endless, cause it

looks endless from here to me. And there’s only that one left?

You’re not making this easy, MIKEL –

EEEHHHH – quiet – I’m not making this easy? I’m not making this EASY? That’s funny. All of this – is what is left of you and your brother’s “little fight”? EEEEWWW-WWWEEEEE, ABEL.
Never give up, huh? All right. All right.
SO. Please, explain yourself and “HOW” I could possibly help you?

Well, we figured….

“WE? “We” figured. –

MIKEL –

Don’t, MIKEL – me, I just wanted to hear the rest of this “WE” business.

The Galactic Council and I figured –

Oh, that “we”? The Democracy thing. Where everyone votes and then its decided what to do, this should be interesting, continue. Please. Please continue. I’m all ears, how I can help?

The Galactic Council and I figured that we might be able –

OH YOU MIGHT BE ABLE (points at the destroyed beach of creation) That’s a real good way of saying that, continue, you might be able…….. I’m still all ears ABEL.

All right, you might be able to help us. You're not making this easy, MIKEL. I thought you'd be excited to see this and be excited to help in saving "the relative".

Me? I'm not making this easy? I'm the sacrificial lamb. How am I "NOT MAKING THIS EASY" for you? Make this easy for me, ABEL, and explain all this – all this "speck of sand" bullshit that I see all over the place.

Those were - other victories of another type of diplomacy that we have evolved from -

Evolved from, that's a good one. Real good one. I'll accept that answer.

You will?

You got a better answer?

Uh – No – No, I don’t.

Then what choice do I have, ABEL? I will agree you got that BIG AND VAST thing correct. Some things get lost in translation – but ya’ll did your best explaining your other “diplomatic resolutions” there, yes you did. But ABEL – I have seen bigger specks of sand than that. ABEL, you mean to tell me I live “inside” of that TINY TINY speck of sand thingy? ABEL did you ever stop to think maybe, just maybe – letting another human see this thing? I mean BEFORE you met me? And let me guess, this is the last time we can do this – save the “relative”?

MIKEL, you’re not making this as fun and amazing as I thought this moment would be for me showing you this.

I'm soooooooo soooorrrrrrrryyyyy about that, Mr. General DEATH. Holy COW, man that is small.
And you intend to "squeeze" me back into that?

Yes.

Oh man. Well – ok – let's go.

ABEL, what am I supposed to do? I thought I was just writing a book. That I had some talent. That I was using my imagination. Now I see I was just reporting. I don't have any talent. I didn't make this up. I just wrote down the stuff you said.

Don't you worry about that MIKEL. Don't you worry about not having any talent at all. You will. You most certainly will.

Pt.2

Later that same night, at the vortex –

MIKE, we gonna do it again. I need you to help me again. You got your dimension jumping shoes on? No? Well get them on, lets go.

Well, BANKS, I bet he can jump all five dimensions. Of course he can do without that funny hat, and medicine bag. I know he can, what we got on this bet – I bet you all the time we got, accept three minutes. ALL THE TIME IN THE WORLD – what you bettin?

All the money? What do you mean by ALL THE MONEY? I'm just making sure. You gonna pay this time? Cause I know he's gonna win this one, baby.

All right MIKE, you ready for this?

No.

Good answer, all right we are ready – BANKS, opener up, let's get this started.

MIKE, we gonna take the time to stop an invasion while you do this jump. MIKEL, Memorize this – quickly, ok? Good. You just do your best you can, MIKE, I got the rest.

MIKE, ABEL and I, been at this with the BANKS for a very long time, you're the best horse in the race we've ever had – don't you worry about a thing. I got you baby. I got you.. You just do your jumps. All five ,MIKE. And relay the message MIKE. That's what's important. Relay the message you memorized. That's all I really want you to do – we got to get this

message across while we can, we have to do this - now.

And the vortex began to open –

All right MIKE, GO!!!

WE ARE….

WE ARE….

WE ARE…

WE ARE…

WE ARE….

BUILDING A GREY ZONE…

BUILDING A GREY ZONE….

BUILDING A GREY ZONE….

BUILDING A GREY ZONE… BUILDING A GREY ZONE….

STOP THE INVASION, NOW.

STOP THE INVASION, NOW.

STOP THE INVASION, NOW.

STOP THE INVASION, NOW.

But on the last jump, I missed the gate, and MAYHAM and I lost the bet.

The bet, Mr. MAYHAM, was all five dimensions three times. It looks like we have won this round. So you will have to pay up as soon as possible.

Well, O.K., a bets a bet. And I most certainly have to pay up – quickly, like you likes to say. So I wills. Be right backs.

Sorry I messed up MAYHAM. We lost. I tried to get it done.

MIKEL, you did get it done. You did exactly what I wanted you to do. You stopped another invasion of this planet and saved the relative again. And yeah, you lost the bet, but MIKEL – that was my plan. MIRACLE'S only happen at the last minute. And we down to our last three minutes now. We ain't gotta win every battle to beat them at our little war, MIKEL. You did great, you did exactly what I wanted you to do. We got this one baby. We got this one. What's this behind your ear? Again? MIKEL, shame on you. Mon, buddy. Let's go chill out.

Pt.3

Back at MIKEL'S campsite by the foot bridge near the sacred Santa Cruz wash – relaxing with MAYHAM.

MAYHAM, what the hell is happening to me? I don't understand anything anymore. Is ABEL, really the 4th Horseman? Am I really the sacrificial lamb? Of the Apocalypse?

Oh, MIKE, well – YES. To all of those questions. But, MIKE, think this through with me – the Apocalypse is a winner take all weapon. That includes the losers MIKE. Also, MIKEL, Jesus gave you fools LIFE after DEATH – so don't tell ABEL I tolls you dis, but he ain't nuttin to fear. Jesus gave you power over the General. He and I just like to keep it a secret cause we like to watch these little shits run around in fear. It's fun to ruin their fun.

MIKEL, we are demigods that are here to – SAVE THE WORLD, and we using you to

do it. MIKEL, I believe in you. That's all you need to know. MIKEL, would you trust anyone else riding shot gun with the Apocalypse Weapon? I know you wouldn't, so trust us, MIKEL, we are the promise makers – here to keep our promise of life eternal – without death and dying no more. That's all little buddy. That's all we're trying to do. Feel me MIKE? Just saving the world, for you and your little girl.

_____ Chapter 5

Think this through with me

Pt.1

That night at the vortex –

Weather report –

Because of your help, I have made a 98% recovery. I’m doing well accept in places where they have a stronghold’s, like the America’s, Europe, and Africa.

- Understood.

Shadow, report –

They blame everything on you. If they spill a glass of milk, they blame you. They are running around in circles.

Nice.

Natural Disaster, report – how do we look?

We have moved from “U” to “D” through “J”, I’m pleased to report General.

Good. That brings me to Precious. Precious Resource, how are you holding up?

We are plentiful and we are bountiful. Being ONE is LOVE, General Toth.

Thank you, Precious, comments noted.

LIGHT’s Report –

DAWN – report

I am pushing them back and have ample reinforcements. We’re looking good, General.

GOOD -

Luna – report –

I still see good in them, I think they can share. We are on time, with the love light being initiated.

Good, report.

Twilight – report.

I know they can share, General. I know they can.

That brings me to MIRACLE'S. Captain Tripps, Jerry, do you have anything for me?

In the voice of Jerry Garcia, “ When the cookies are done baking. I’m almost done baking cookies. Can’t stop now, they’re almost finished. When the cookies are done, I will be on my way,” tell the children that’s what grand ma say’s….Grand Ma say’s REAL SOON. We will be there. We. WILL. BE THERE.

Misfits and MAYHAM – report -

Couldn’t be better, Boss. We got this one baby.
We got this one.

Pt. 2

Abel, I don't want people tripping on me. Why did you and CAIN make me put that in the book about the “Mark of the Beast” ? Man, do
you know how much trouble this can cause me? –

Mikel, we're trying to save the world. Cain had a problem with you when he saw that you had the mark of the beast. The final chapter was his contribution MIKEL, and CAIN is the KING of King's. He can do almost anything he wants. And it's about time we did something about this homophobia that keeps you men out of Heaven.

I want you men there in Heaven. But MIKEL, gay came first. The family unit that you know of today was an evolution. The first form of reproduction, MIKEL, was a sexual reproduction. Everything else came after that.

What came first – MIKEL – the chicken or the egg?

ABEL, this question has always perplexed me. And I think from my experience growing "flowers" that the answer could only be without the hermaphrodite there wouldn't be a chicken or an egg.

Check out the big brains on MIKEL. Way to go. How did you come up with that?

Well, I would have 40 female plants in a room and if you didn't watch them closely, one would produce pollen and become male – out of survival.

Excellent, MIKEL. Excellent. That's exactly what happened, sorta. Yes, we were once Asexual, then we became breeders and evolved into mating, and the family unit that you know of today. It was an evolution, MIKEL. It evolved. I'm trying real hard to get the mating into Heaven. Get us away from – well those that hate humans. Humans mate and breed. The "others" spawn and create. They are
"Children of the Darkness". Your kind are "Children of the Light". You humans are the very first of your kind. Bi-sexes. Male and Female. MIKEL, hermaphrodism is what we have in the kingdom of darkness.

No one likes change, MIKEL. So on Earth as it is in Heaven. No-one likes change. But the battle and fight has always been over you strange “children of the light.” You family having, child loving, fathers and mothers. Humans, and the female, were the last two creations of a GOD with infinite love – the grand master creator god – SMOKE.

There are no homophobes allowed in Heaven. It’s a LOVE ONE ANOTHER kingdom. No hate or fear allowed.

I had to explain to CAIIN that you didn't take the mark “voluntarily”. That the management- the “people” in charge, the “once “necessary EVIL that I have told you about, force you to do it at birth.

This is a big problem we are having back home. First, men aren’t making their way into Heaven. It begins with the homophobia, then there’s the hunting –

Heaven is a “Thou shalt not kill” kingdom. No deer hunter was ever going to make into the kingdom of Heaven with a rule like that. Neither were the soccer mom’s killing bugs with the car taking kids to school. And the “people” in charge – the “once necessary” evil, know this. They never intended to share MIKEL.

Ever hear of Dante’s Inferno? That’s very real. And that’s the problem. As CAIN sat above and lived like a KING, he relied on demonic and angelic forces to rule over the Earth. However, the demonic forces, I believe have gotten greedy. Dante’s Inferno has evolved from seven layers of Hell, into fourteen layers – they’re taking advantage of CAIN. Making CAIN creates more layers of Hell, instead of fixing the problem. Which, in my opinion, is them – the “people in charge”.

But it’s a three step mark, MIKEL.

The second part of the mark is you were raised almost fatherless. Your father was there to help you overcome the trauma. But most men don't have that in their lives - fathers. The mark is a three step process. First is you are traumatized as infants, then your fatherless upbringing, who will not be with you to help you overcome the trauma of receiving the mark. As it is written humans receive the mark voluntarily on their fore(skin)head. And every parent will volunteer this practice is done to their child, not knowing they are being eternally tricked into having to return to Earth, and miss their chance into Heaven.

MIKEL, if I cut off your fore (skin) – I reveal a (fore) head. Ever parent is told by the establishment that cutting off the fore (skin) prevents sexually transmitted disease and is “normal” – that’s what they are led to believe – by the authority. But the authority also claims to be human, which they are not.

We entrusted, as I have told you, others to help us guide you into heaven. Soulless “people” - if you will, that refuse to come out and explain why they are here, and – even, that they are here. They were once gigantic in size. And after two Apocalypses’ they were modified to look like you. You call their remains the dinosaurs. What you call them now - is the authority.

Michael, we are ascending angels that "do not kill", and “love one another”. Because of the Mark of the Beast, the Galactic Empire and CAIN were forced to create a NEW realm, one for queer haters, and in the past few Earths, that realm is getting more over crowded than both Heaven and Hell. It's causing an imbalance. We never created the authority to gain control over **our** creations.

Which is what MAYHAM and I are fighting. We fight the authority – the children of darkness. They claim that you humans cannot change. They claim that

you humans need torture and the Inferno to evolve. They are out of hand, taking advantage of our kindness, forgiveness, and dominion over them. Simply put they are taking advantage of us.

They do not fear Heaven or Hell, since they're soulless, and have their own home deep inside the Inferno. They care not what happens to them. They were entrusted, these creatures – the authority; to teach you value and virtues.

To value of your soul. Value of your planet. Value of your family, and neighbors, and also – to value your morals. In the meantime, that creation, the authority and justice, have run amuck of the teachings that they preach. They drag you into the place we created for them to punish you. They are the evil that hide among us. The evil of the mind.

We, the Galactic Empire - do not grant them a name. Without a name, you have no power, and no magic can be bestowed upon you, what so ever. They live longer, because they are biological machines. The names that they go by – Authority, Government, BANKS, public, people, people person, and person – we never gave them those names. They took it upon themselves to design those terms. So therefore, they do not contain the power in their entire being that CAIN, MAYHAM and I possess in our little finger.

Mikel, what are we going to do when you humans come up with a better means of transportation - what will we do with all these cars? We had the same problem with you humans. You humans mate and breed much faster than we can solve your problems. And remember, I wasn't always on your side. So I have to admit regretfully I created this idea. I supported the solution. But now I have changed. I have evolved. Don't hate me but, MIKEL – but –

EARTH is another acronym - it stands for –

E
A
reptilians
T
humans

I'm sorry for the trouble I helped create, because it was never supposed to be this way. I don't run MY DEMOCRACY, MIKEL. I can only assist MY DEMOCRACY. Come up with ideas, talk and vote. What happens next is evolution, and it’s a process. This fix, this process, has taken on a new existence. An existence CAIN and I are here to solve.

For one, I never thought I would admire you humans, or even adore you humans - you are so unlike us demigods. And two, I never thought that our reptilian creations would ever defy us the way they have, evolved to be so deceitful and aggressive.

The reptilians, unlike you, cannot handle first time events – they can't handle "accidents". But you humans can. It's a terrible mess, and Mikel - this was my idea. I'm sorry. The reptilians, or vampires, as you know them in folk lore – were my creation and my idea.

You humans had grown too big in number to control, so we created a "car that ran off of other cars," in order to fix the problem. But, MIKEL, problems – just like solutions – evolve, and that is what we are facing now.

That last chapter was all CAIN'S idea. He got pissed when that cop kept circling you calling you a fag over and over, drinking and driving too. You have "freedom of speech" in this country. If he doesn't like your book, that's his problem.

And he's not allowed to threaten you in uniform. And that's not the first time that has happened since CAIN has been

here. You could say CAIN is disappointed at his “people” and the “just us” system. Cops aren’t supposed to be thugs and murderers. They’re not supposed to beat and threaten people. They’re not supposed to arrest people for nothing, either. CAIN just had enough, MIKEL, just like you. So he did what he did, trying to help a little.

Pt.3

Pontoon Beach, Illinois - December 24th- 2007

Mikel, I know your father molested you – you are a child molester – I can tell – you carry the sign of a child molester.

Do what? I’m not a child molester. I would never molest a child.

You carry the sign of a child molester, I know you do. Admit it your father molested you.

My father didn’t molest me, you’re crazy. My father is a good man and would never do anything like that.

Mikel you have more than one father. I know you do. Your father molested you. I know your father molested you. You carry the sign of a person that’s been molested. Your father molested you. Admit it. I know you have more than one father. Everyone does. Your father molested you. Admit it.

My father never molested me.

Not your dad. Your father.

My step dad was also a good man. He would have never molested me. He was a good man.

Somebody in your past has molested you – I know they have – you carry the sign of someone that's been molested. You have been molested, and if we let you continue to live, you will molest other children. We can't let that happen. There is a reason nobody wants you with them on Christmas. There is something wrong with you, otherwise you'd be with them and not here with me. You carry the sign of a child molester. People that have been molested will molest other children, and you carry the sign of a person that has been molested – I KNOW YOU DO. I KNOW YOU DO. Admit it your father molested you.

If you've been molested, you will molest other children. We can't let that happen. But you have to admit this, you have been molested haven't you? You carry the mark of a person that has been

molested. Admit it. Your father molested you.

NO. I do not know what you are talking about.

Your father molested you. You have more than one father, Mikel, think about it. You carry the mark of a man that has been molested, I know you do.

How?

The way you act.

The way I act? Explain yourself.

Mikel, what are all these wars for?

Population control, obviously.

Correct. Thinning the heard of the possibility of more evil becoming ever more evil. We can't take care of every human. I don't have to explain, I can look at you and tell that you have been molested. Your father molested you. Admit it. Think about it. Admit it to me. I know your father molested you. It might be a distant memory, but you still remember being molested – I know you do. You carry the mark of a man that has been molested. Admit it Mikel, your father molested you.

It wasn't until CAIN explained to me about the "mark of the beast" that I understood what this person was telling me years ago on Christmas eve. Obviously another shape shifter trying to find a reason to kill another human. It's obvious to me now what he was saying – my "heavenly father" molested me - at

birth during circumcision. They use this trauma, placed there at birth, to get you to break down and remember being molested. Once you begin to cry, and you admit getting molested, they in turn – then – kill you.

We all think that Christmas as a family holiday. And it is. It also happens on the three darkest days of the year. There are two sides to the coin, that's what we are told, correct? What do "the forgotten" do for Christmas, besides suffer? If they are smart, they don't accept kindness from anyone.

The three darkest days of the year – Christmas, is also the blood sacrifice of the global consciousness to the coven of the three kings. Evil witches will extract a forgotten person, someone nobody will miss – a bum, a homeless person, take them home, treat them with a little

kindness, turn on them, and kill them. I would know. I've been through it.

A blood sacrifice happens during the three days of darkness – all over the world for 24 hours. The ritual takes all the time of darkness provided to the planet so that the three kings can maintain control over the entire world's population. The Vatican knows about this, they're the ones that put the mark there for the forgotten to remember the trauma and beg for redemption - by their killers. Poor human – better off dead. Nobody loves him.

Kill them with kindness. If you look in Jerimiah 10 – 3, it clearly states that a Christmas trees are an abomination to the Christian Religion. Do not cut a tree from the forest and adorn it with silver and gold and place gifts underneath it the way the pagans do – or something like that.

Constantine, a Roman, was no friend of the Christian, and bowed to the three kings of evil. This ritual is a Constantine rite of passage for the shape shifters that hide among us. Ask
Rome.

Christmas, for their kind, is a time to clean the streets of undesirable humans. Poor , down trodden, homeless, family less people - broken people, ugly people – humans. Earthlings. The brood will pick up people that no-one will miss, treat them nice for two days and nights. Put them on a trial about their life, get them to admit life sucks and they are better off dead – then kill them in a sacrifice. Kill them with kindness. Happens every three darkest days of the year. These days represent the three kings of a world forgotten. OUR WORLD, forgotten by CAIN, our creator. The three darkest days of the year represent the three kings that rule the world – Today.

Tomorrow. And “Yes Sir” Day. No-one escapes alive normally. I did.
After three rounds of Russian roulette.

But it wasn’t till ten years later, after meeting
CAIN the King of Darkness and the Lord of LOVE and LIGHT – that I understood what this shapeshifting freak was saying to me over and over – “I know you father molested you. I know your father molested you”. That freak of space was talking about

MY HEAVINLY FATHER – my church father.

Thank you. Paybacks a bitch. And trust me bitch you paying it back. Rome will burn for this.

Chapter 6

Let me know your mind

Pt.1

A few weeks ago at MIKEL'S campsite, ABEL began to explain -

MIKEL, the powers that be – "the authority", want to hold you in slavery forever. Keep you stuck between creationism and evolution forever. While everything around you evolves. Cars evolve. Commercials and T.V. evolve. Movie special effects and the way they are made evolve. The fashions you wear evolve. Hairstyles evolve. Tool's evolve. Your phone has evolved. Everything around you, even the management's ability to make new slaves has evolved.

Creation is a step by step process. I take this brick I put it here. I take this brick I

put it there. Behold my creation. My creation is perfect, my creation is a wall.

Evolution happens when you break through the barriers and walls and k**no**w that there are **no** boundaries.

Pt.2

MIKEL, Beelzebub as she called in the “good book” – is actually quiet fantastic. If she were here she could fix things. Quickly. We might not even have these problems.

I know that you’ve seen her, and the pictures of her – the goat head and three breast, and yes – she can look like that. That was an accident.

We didn’t have “fictional” books back in the old days. We came up with fictional books so that what happened to BB wouldn’t happen to anyone else. The books we had in the old days were all training manuals.

And Beelzebub – who I prefer to call BB, or Queen Bee, cause that’s what she is; she is the Queen BEE in our history – she loved reading. She loved reading so much that she would break into the library to read. There wasn’t a lock or door she couldn’t get through. And we couldn’t allow what happened to her happen to anyone else. So we created fictional story’s, fables and fantasy’s, for those that like to read.

MIKEL, BB grew to read five books at a time levitating through osmosis. She learned more than anyone else, faster than anyone else.

She is a prisoner just like you. And just like me, she is a volunteer. She went into banishment with LORD DR. EVIL Quetzalcoatl, and the others in hopes that brother and I could fix this alone and return her here. Fix her. She is very bi-polar at times, and she can shape shift.

MIKEL, when I say she loved reading I mean it. She discovered how to shape shift on her own.
There weren't a rule about goats being in the Library, but girls were not allowed. Thus the goat head and three breast. Keeping her out of the Library was problematic to say the least.

She is not a LORD, or a GOD – she is only known in our kingdom as a High Priestess and Queen of the flyers – Queen Bee. She's not even a demigod, MIKEL. But she is royalty. She is a

Queen. Eden is her birth name. This was her home. The Garden of Eden.

I know that you have heard me call her “Beelze- BOZO” – but that’s because I never wanted her to go. I was totally opposed to her volunteering for banishment. With her, we could’ve fixed this by now. She is very powerful and very respected.

She is also very pregnant. With my children. It was a “mistake” – if you will, on my part – getting her pregnant. I was young, General of TWO army’s, had two great mates – Akosha and Asoka. No man could want more. I thought everything belonged to me, and I could have it all.

BB was one of my students, and we mated – I took our relationship too far because I wouldn’t take “NO” for an

answer. She was just different than the twins.

I love Akosha and Asoka, but I love Eden differently. She, however, currently – hates me; I don't know why but I would assume it's because she could've fixed all this by now, and she is pregnant with my kids.

She is almost done with being pregnant, MIKEL. She is about to give birth to my first children. I need to get her out of banishment. She still hasn't forgiven me for ruining her body with pregnancy, but I hope that when she is released and not pregnant anymore – that the two of us can share some type of family. Together or apart. You have taught me MIKEL – how to be a good father. We have been soul mates many times MIKEL. And you always do the most you can for your children. You do. I have learned so much from you MIKEL.

I have feelings for Eden, BB, that are different than the feelings I had for Akosha and Asoka. I know I did things wrong, by cheating on the twins, but what's done is done – right? I still wouldn't change a thing. Accept for the "taking so long" part of getting Eden out of banishment. That I would definitely change.

Eden and I didn't mate but a few times, but as you well know – it's not how often you mate that determines if you get her pregnant or not.

That's what I am guilty of. For our children sake, I should've fixed this by now. I'm running out of time.

Chapter 7

All I want to know is -

Pt.1

On the streets of Tucson, CAIN'S third day alive -

I have to get a message to the Church. I have to talk to them now.

Suddenly CAIN, infuriated at the mess he was seeing around him, crossed the street to get to the church that was in my head. He paid no attention to the oncoming traffic –

Jesus Christ!!!! ABEL, will you tell your brother to watch out? I almost got hit by

that truck, he can’t do this – he can’t just walk into traffic.

Easy MIKEL, Jesus Christ is standing right here. He is the KING of Kings, MIKEL, watch your mouth. I can’t tell him what to do – I’m just the general. He tells me what to do. And I do it. SOMETIMES. I can’t tell the King what to do. I can’t tell him anything, MIKEL. That’s the problem we are fixing. Caspice, MIKEL?

I want to visit a church being run in my honor.

CAIN, they’re only open on Sunday. It’s Wednesday.

Someone will be there, surely. If it’s in mine name - the way I tell them to.

Well, yeah they operate as a school for kids, it’s WEDNESDAY – CAIN, they don’t operate the same on Wednesday. This one feed’s and give showers on Monday and Friday. Has church on Sunday, and offer’s a service for children throughout the week; we can go there, but I warn you CAIN, history has it - this might not work well for the KING of King’s.

CAIN, no one ever bothered to tell the humans that you are also the King over the Kings of Darkness and Evil – therein lies the problem. These humans are the children of Light, not children of Darkness where we come from.

We walked to the KIVA and knocked on the back door. I had been in communication with this church on ABEL’S behalf throughout the entire Apocalypse – so they probably think I’m a nut job. I don’t blame them either. And to believe I got dragged into this after

someone hit me in the head with a rock, AT that churches parking lot five months ago.

Now this, taking the Holy Spirit of Jesus Christ – CAIN, ABEL'S brother; to church. He wanted to go when it was closed to see what would happen and ask questions.

When we got there they graciously offered me some salad, slice of pizza and a yellow bell pepper – CAIN had never had a yellow bell pepper before. This was something new to him. He got a little over excited.

It didn't help that upon his arrival he asked some pretty creepy question's that went something like this, "what is a homeless feeding? Why are they homeless?", As if I didn't know myself but it seemed CAIN was blaming the

masses for homelessness not knowing all the facts. CAIN was simply curious and looking for answers.

“What is credit?” – he continued, “ How does one use credit? He asked if he could see a credit card and the poor lady walked away, that’s when CAIN ate the plate of food that the church had provided. We ate the salad and the pizza, with no necessary excitement, but when CAIN ate the yellow bell pepper he became very energetic and happily too excited. Way too excited.

As soon as we got inside to express our excitement over the yellow bell pepper, we were grabbed by the shoulder and kicked out. CAIN had been just a little too weird with the question’s, I believe.

AS we crossed the street I said to CAIN. –

“ Sorry you got kicked out of Church - J.C.”

“MIKEL”, ABEL said, “That’s the best reception we’ve ever had, haven’t you heard the story?”

Don’t give up brother. I promise you we will go when it’s operating as a church. I think I see why dad kept having MIKEL come here now, but I can’t tell you everything. Come on CAIN; let’s go do something I know you’ve never done before. It’s the only way MIKEL is going to make any money. We will go and fly a sign.

We will beg for money. In the meantime, inmate, keep counting stones till we get there.

We walked to the busy section of 23rd Avenue and Highway ten and flew a sign that read “anything helps”. I stood there for three hours and made $2.50.

Why do they make them do this?

CAIN, people rely on jobs here to survive. All these cars are people operating everything you see around you. They are busy at the task of running the operation. Running society.

That wasn’t a replicator you were looking into a minute ago – that was an ash tray. That’s where people put their trash. People don’t share their tobacco. And it is not replicated. MIKEL scavenges his tobacco because he is broke and poor.

After making $10.00 which took almost two hours, I ditched the sign and walked to the Library.

What’s wrong with MIKEL’S stomach?

He’s hungry CAIN. He has to eat something.

What’s he going to eat?

Whatever he finds or begs for; and MIKEL won’t beg. So, eat this.

ABEL grabbed a jalapeno off the ground.

Oh my. What’s happening to my mouth? It burns. It burns badly. Help me. ABEL?

It’s “on fire”.

- OH MY, what do I do? It burns. It burns badly.

That was a jalapeno. We call that a spicy pickle, CAIN. That burning sensation is called “spicy”. The human tongue can taste many different sensations. I wasn’t trying to hurt you CAIN, I just had to have a little fun with you. You just ate your first jalapeno. Good job.

How long does “spicy” last, it hurts?

Sometimes forever. No I’m only kidding. Let’s go get some water, that’ll fix it.

Where can we get some water?

At the Library. Come on lets go, it just right there.

CAIN tried the door, but it was locked.

Don’t open till 9 a.m. – its only 8:45 a.m., CAIN. I guess you’ll just have to suffer. No come on, there’s water at the bus station.

What a wimp you are KING. Jalapenos are very well loved by the people of Arizona. MIKEL loves his jalapenos. But that was your first one. I’m proud of you. You handled it like a champ.

Pt.2

The next day on the North Side Church facebook page appeared –

Dear Pastor Alice,

What’s the difference between you and MIKEL? MIKEL ascended. What’s your excuse? Why can’t you ascend? What could possibly be the difference between you and a homeless man with five educations that also goes to church like you? The only thing that comes to mind for me is that MIKEL spent many years fighting fires. Six of them. That means he was willing to die for you, just like Jesus, without ever meeting you – just like Jesus.

Would you do that for anyone but your family?
Die for them, like a soldier does?

I know you can do it. I know you can ascend. It is written. It’s in the Bible. Didn’t you learn that in the past? OR, am I just fooling myself? You went to

seminary school. Didn’t they ever talk about this in the past? Or was it just other more important issues, like keeping us in a vicious cycle of living and dying?

Everyone has something to hide. Everyone does. Trust me you should spend a day at my job – “Let me guess, you didn’t know it was loaded? Didn’t know it was plugged in. Ohhhhh, you didn’t know he was coming home early, that’s a new one – no, I’m just kidding. Just yanking your chain. Still got you here, didn’t it? Let me see, which button should I push, soooo many to choose from? Well, which button would you like me to push? Decisions, decisions, so many choices – which choice is the best one? Should I push all of them? Well, here, you pick one. No not that one, anyone but that one. Well, ok, but I tried to warm ya. Talk to the hand, I’m only doing my job. I can’t put you back in that, that’s broken. Good move. Listen,

when you see Satan, ask him where the men's toilet is.It's a long running joke, and I just can't resist messing with him. The look on his face is priceless. Sigh ignore ya"

I mean the list at my job goes on and on – forever it seems. But listen, we all have something to hide. I mean think about the Baptist. They don't like music and dancing in front of other people. Mormons don't like any vice in front of other church members. And Amish people don't – well, I don't know what they don't do. I've never met one, have you? I don't know what they don't do. Why don't you be a dear, and find out for me, I'm dying to know.

Either way, I know you can ascend. But you have to LOVE unconditionally. Both Jesus, and MIKEL, love you enough to die for you, without so much as a thank you,

or more than a $20.00 bill. It is written, Pastor Alice. It can be done.
It's been done. And this is important.

Do you remember when I told you about asking
Satan where the men's toilet is? Well, Pastor Alice, that's where we put the LOVE LIGHT switch. That's what makes the joke with Satan so priceless, dare I say. The look on Satan's face when ya'll ask him – it's a hoot, it's a real hoot. That look makes me laugh every time I see it.

Listen I know – you need another sign, but not today. I just gave you the map to the LOVE LIGHT switch. You can't miss it, I promise. MAYHAM made sure of it. Just follow the signs. You obviously need them, so MAYHAM put plenty there for you to follow, unlike mine of course. That is all Pastor Alice.

Pt.3.

Where is he going?

He's getting some food, CAIN. He’s hungry.

Why didn't he go inside like the others?

Well that's for “their kind”, that's a privilege “those kind” get. The management and the others get to eat from inside. Mikel gets a very special treat, called EATING OUT OF A DUMPSTER LIKE THOSE KIND OF PEOPLE DO.

“Those kind”?

Oh yeah, CAIN, your management been doing a wonderful job at telling the humans how different all of you are - to their kind, and they act just like you.

What are all those things?

Those are cigarette butts, CAIN.

Why do they put them on the ground?

So the management doesn't have to throw them away, inside of a trash can, and also, so the slaves have a task – picking up the trash. “Pick up after me.” Task?

Something to stay busy, CAIN. Like begging for money to eat. MIKEL hates to beg. I mean with five educations why should he beg for money, this guy should be working, but thank the LORDS he isn’t cause otherwise we’d be having an ARMEGEDION wouldn’t we?

The humans are supposed to be ascending, not doing meaningless task. I know that the humans CAN ascend, CAIN, MIKEL did it. So can the others. But we all know what the problem is, don’t we?

But, brother I never said to treat the humans
like…….

I know, CAIN. That's why I have you here. We will never get the other humans to ascend, as long as the management continues down this

direction. “When salt loses its saltiness” CAIN, you know the deal. Your creation or not – DEMZ DUH RULEZ, and we gotta follow the rules; that’s in the rules.

So here we are. CAIN, inmate, this for your own good. Now get in there and eat, MIKEL is hungry.

But it look’s nasty.

Get in there, inmate, before I kick your ass and throw you in there. You are going to get into that dumpster, and you are going to find this body of MIKEL’S some food. Now GO, sire, before I stop being nice to you.

It’s dirty in there.

So what. Don’t you complain, CAIN? This is what MIKEL has to do if he gets

hungry. This is how he and many others just like him are forced to eat, CAIN. Your management makes sure that they have to.

Eat, CAIN. Eat up. Make sure you find something good too. You can't eat everything from the trash. Some of this stuff will get you sick, so you have to be picky. Eat – CAIN.

This is disgusting. I can't do this.

Oh, yes you can and- yes you will – ABEL throws CAIN against the dumpster hard – INMATE EAT. You eat this trash CAIN, cause if its good enough for MIKEL and all he can get to eat, it's what you're going to eat. You are human right now. So you will eat just like a human. EAT INMATE, EAT.

That a boy, KING. Eat. The human body isn’t like our bodies or the managements bodies. CAIN, humans are warm blooded, not cold blooded like the management. They have to have warm food to get their bodies going and stay in good health. But the management is cold blooded, CAIN. And they mock the humans at every turn. MIKEL isn’t allowed to buy hot food, or even coffee with his social security food stamp card. The management claims that this will ruin the nation, poor people buying hot food and coffee. But, CAIN – inmate, humans need hot food to get their bodies going. It’s not just for the caffeine. It’s for the heat. It gets them warm on the inside.

CAIN, I think you’ve had enough food from the trash. Come on, let’s go.

What about MIKEL being hungry?

He’ll wait till dinner is served tomorrow; he doesn’t eat this shit – its trash. They might only have a few dinners a week here, but I have taught MIKEL how to meditate through the hunger pains. He can go all week without a meal, and sometimes does. I just had to give you the full experience of being a human in a prison run in your glory, big brother. You did good brother, I am proud of you.

Pt.4

The next day on the North Side Church facebook page appeared –

I want you to know this morning was my brother, the KING of King’s first mile walked, first morning sky, first wind on face, FIRST jalapeno, what a wimp. This has been a good day for us.

I keep saying I understand that you need a sign, do I not? Let me explain to you why. There was once a little girl named Pestilence - I call her PESTY, she is my second in command of my Apocalypse strike team. She was assigned to the team after the 2nd Apocalypse. She is the first BITCH ever given COMPASSION.

Before we go any further, yes, I called her a bitch, she is - or was - a bitch. Understand that in the places of the world where women have freedom like men - it was an army of bitches that helped us evolve there. So the bitch does have its place in our history and evolution - especially the evolution of women being treated - well nice.

Pesty, is a real bitch when she wants to be- but do not call my girl a bitch or you will deal with me personally GENERAL DEATH. Pesty was
the first bitch, the very first one to be given compassion. And there was a time

AFTER THE PANGIA VOTE, after Apocalypse 2 - that the Apocalypse strike team had just been a BOYS ONLY CLUB. And well WE NEEDED A SIGN - just like you. You're made in the image of God; we have our doubts sometimes too. So our team of BOY'S ONLY designed a test that would prove whether the compassion was in there. Or not.

We were younger and more immature and also drunk more times than not, so me and the boys devised a plan to get OUR SIGN. The Pangea had been split, so Lord DR. EVIL himself, Quetzalcoatl, D-man and Pesto, PESTY'S immaculate creation, and I were having way too much fun and living in another UTOPIA called Atzlan.

Famine was on assignment "HELPING" - if you will- helping us get OUR SIGN. He took one for the team and watched over PESTY but never said anything. Just like

he always is. PESTY claims she’s heard him talk before, but I think she’s lying.

NOW IF THERE IS A LEGEND OF A REALLY
BAD ASS GIRL, WHO CAN BEAT UP AN ENTIRE VILLAGE OF MEN WALKING UP THE HIMALAYAN MOUNTAINS WITH A VERY QUIET CHIRPA WHO MAY OR MAY NOT HAVE GOLF CLUBS, AND AN UMBRELLA, BARE FOOTED - THAT IS THE LEGEND OF PESTY.

We were anti female and very warrior and very –uh- drunk all the time, and we needed a sign. We devised an obstacle course that can only be compared to the dungeon scene in the movie kung fu panda and the golden child movie combined. It's legendary and mythical at this point.

There are probably still eight dead PESTY bodies on the trail up or down the

Himalayan Mountains - frozen still to this day.

Our “SIGN”, if you will, took us 600 years and 35 PESTY’S to get - with a 26 year battle between PESTY and the LORD of EVIL - my once upon a time commander – DR. EVIL himself, King of all jungle’s, QUETZALCOATL, who lost his title and rank in the Apocalypse crew over this test with Pesty about her compassion.

KIABAB !!!! - did you hear that?

Oh, that's gonna leave a mark? How we gonna explain that?

Oh, let’s just say the rain did it.
Our reigning champ!..... Lord DR. EVIL.

Man – 26 years. We better watch it around PESTY, if she ever makes it on the squad, she’s a bad bitch now.

Should we fix this place?

Who’s gonna ever know? It’s a rain forest noone lives in.

Besides, who would ever come here? It’s just a big hole in the ground now.

Who's gonna know the difference years from now... she shoulda won that fight. That was all her, till the end – poor Pesty.

Boys I don’t know if she truly wants to be on this team - OR IF SHE'S OUT FOR REVENGE.

This might just back fire on us boys. That compassion better be in there or we are dead meat.

So I truly understand that you need a sign. I do. You are made in the image of God, and we are made in the image of you. We needed a sign when it came to

Pesty and her new sense of compassion. And now you need a sign. We went a little over board with Pesty, so I do not mind one bit. Like I said I get it – I totally understand your need for a sign. I do.

If she can forgive us for that, it's in there, boy’s. We will be fine. But if it’s not - we better prepare ourselves for bed - eternal rest type bed cause she’s a bad ass now.

If any one of you of you ever tell her there wasn’t anything in that potion but food coloring – we’re screwed. She’s hit full potential.

MMMuuuuuMMM’S the word boy’s.

We gotta pinky swear on this one boy’s.

Trust me when I say to you that I understand how, and why, you could need a sign. But there comes a time when we've gone too far and come too far, and you have to ignite your faith. And accept your sign, and move forward.

Because you are the pastor I wanted you to know that I brought CAIN, who is the HOLY SPIRIT OF CHRIST to your church. We were run off, but I wanted you to know, he said it was the best reception he has ever had. Maybe you've heard the story.

So no worries. We'll come back when you're operating as a Church. Sorry to scare you. I'm not giving you a sign today. I just wanted to tell you, Jesus Christ and I are sorry to have dropped in unannounced. That is all Pastor.

_____ Chapter 8

Is, Are you KIND?

Pt.1

WOODEN, you’re out !!! You just got out. I am glad you are free. Thank you for your help with the suit - but look, I don't want you in my MILITARY. Nothing personal. I just want you to go have some fun. You’ve been gone a very long time.

And if you insist on being in my military you are here by ordered to go and have some fun first, then report back to me.

Nothing personal, but you are hereby ordered to go have some fun

- THAT'S AN ORDER. Caspice?

So, it's either, go have some fun and not be in my military - or you are here by ordered to go have some fun - if you are in my military.

Don't insubordinate, or I will punish you by making you go have some fun with my wolf pack, cream pies and seltzer water fights, understood?

Good.

Pt.2

Wooden, we have a job for you. You wanted to be in my military, and won’t go away and have some fun - and well I'm sick of looking at you, so - you’re going to be my new scout chief - now, look, go release everyone that you “like” and “trust” for this assignment - do you understand - you want a military job, this is it - since you refuse to go have some fun.

I need someone to go see what's bothering us, these planes are still

dropping these bad chemtrails - which means we have something else here with us. They are definitely out of my jurisdiction, and my other scouts are busy.

So I need a new scout crew, that's gonna be you and whoever you pick - remember only release the “most trusted” and “most liked”.

a few hours later – I

don't know who to

release.

I LOST THAT BET. I guessed he be back in 15 minutes - you guessed an hour, so no one wins. WOODEN, we knew you'd have trouble. I mean who you gonna release that you “trust” and “like” after 600 million years of stabbing each other in the back in our constant WAR? So, we

knew it'd be tough to decide. Look WOODEN, go release them all.

THAT'S AN ORDER.

Copy, WOODEN?

SIRE.

GO LET ALL THOSE SUCKA’S OUT SIRE, and get to work SCOUTS of the GALAXY.

- THAT"S AN ORDER.

Pt.3

WOODEN- ABEL, how we doing out there?

We're gonna be O.K.!!!!

WOODEN, I don't care about you scout's, ya'll are disposable, how are WE doing?

We're gonna be o.k.!!

Wooden, I don't give a damn about you scouts - what about US.????

We - are - gonna - be - o- k –

WOODEN there you go with that selfishness again, I don't care about you scouts (he he he) LOOK, did you see anything? See anything at all?

NO I HAVEN'T.

Nice - call me when you do. hehehehehehehe

Pt.4

OK, Vamps, here's how we are going to play this. There will be no more Wolf Pack, no more vampire killers. We are one big ugly family now. It's either this, or we kill all of you now. Your choice.

But here's the deal, if you want some of my respect, you now have this one chance to earn a little, or muck it up real bad, caspice?

You will follow WOODEN, give him space, but follow him. I need him to have back up. Do not disturb him. Your only assignment is to have his back. If he needs you, you better bring him back alive. I still haven't learned to like you, so I don’t care how many you lose. He comes back - in one piece, no matter how many fall - you up for earning this very little bit, and first step, in my new respect for you and our new truce?

Good. – now go, THAT’S AN ORDER.

Glad they're gone.

Wolf Pack, I need two of the elder's and two of the youngest.

Give them a day’s lead, and I want you to go prove to them that we are a family now. Show them we mean business about being friends and that our fight is over, caspice?

Take as many seltzer bottles and cream pies as necessary. Don't let them down till they laugh their once evil asses off. Impress Me, - That’s an ORDER.

This is gonna be funny, little brother.

Oh you think so now, but the truth is - this is gonna be really really funny. I wish I could see the look on their faces when the wolf pack shows up....

Pt.5

CAIN, today we are going to take a break and do something I know you have never done. And I will explain a few things to you.

ABEL, CAIN and I went to the market and bought a steak and pint of Ben and Jerry’s ice cream.

We took the trolley back to the River Park Inn and walked the bike trail to the city grill, steak in hand.

“CAIN”, ABEL explained to his brother, “we needed the protein to develop the brain. And you’re going to cook and eat a steak today. MIKEL’S body could use the steak. He has walked many a mile for you since you have been here”.

We started a fire and sat and talked. ABEL taught his brother to use his smell

and senses of hearing and feeling to cook the steak over the fire.

A KING like CAIN had never done anything for himself in a physical form. This was another first.

The steak was hefty; ABEL was spoiling the KING with my well fare credit that had just come on after the dumpster incident.

After the steak we dug into the Ben and Jerry’s pint of an ice cream that had full chunks of peanut butter chocolate candy in it. CAIN had never tasted anything but our chocolate chip cookies, he’d never had anything as good as this ice cream.

See, humans came up with this thing called ice cream on their own. They can evolve. I love this stuff.

About that time one of the peanut butter cups got stuck in my throat. I started to choke. I was alone.

I had to give myself CPR by throwing myself against the park table. The candy eventually came out. But it was the first time CAIN had ever felt the fear of death a human goes through. Abel began to explain –

CAIN, go easy. We still have the Apocalypse Weapon on and if MIKEL dies I gotta go to work. We're not trying to destroy the place, or MIKEL. We can't control them so easily. Let the human give you the experience, CAIN.

Brother, what is that?

In the Santa Cruz wash next to the park grill was a coyote walking slowly. The coyote was sick with mange, and ABEL explained this to his brother and added, if she's here looking for food that means

there’s no food in the mountains of Tucson.

She’s sick CAIN. Even the wild life is needing us to free this prison.

Pt.6

That afternoon on 4th (Horseman) Ave. –

- on the corner of 9th and 4th

This is all wrong. This is all wrong. I have been deceived. My team is not doing what I’m being told. This is wrong. Very wrong. Oh, brother, Oh brother, I have been deceived. This is so terribly wrong. This is not what I expecting to see. This place is incredible and waaay – not the way it’s supposed to be. I’m being told lies. What am I supposed to do?

What am I supposed to do ABEL?

Little overwhelming isn't it? CAIN, you look stressed. Have a seat.

CAIN sat on the potted barrel cactus on the corner of 4th and 9th Avenue, not knowing any better.

OWWWWWWWW!!!

Well I didn't say sit there. That's a cactus – they bite, CAIN. Sorry brother, I had to do that. We haven't goofed on each other in a very long time. I just had to do it. Please forgive me Lord of Forgiveness. Haha. – I got you. I got you good, too.

I wanted to show you something, CAIN. Even the plants have a defense system. Check it out. The plants here evolved to survive by creating thorns so that the herbivore's wouldn't eat and kill them. Everything wants to survive, CAIN. Everything evolves. Even the KING of Kings.

CAIN, examined the plant closer upon getting up from the ground. CAIN, having never been human before, had also never been curios before. Curiosity got the best of the KING of Kings, and he touched the thorns on the barrel cactus.

Ow!!!

That a boy MIKEL, give your life over to Christ, even though you knew better – I love you MIKEL. CAIN – he didn't have to do that for you. He knew it was going to hurt him from lessons he learned doing

the same thing growing up. But he let you do it CAIN. See what I mean, CAIN? See what I mean.

Don’t forget, CAIN, the human feels everything we feel 1000 times more and 1000 faster than we do ourselves– we might not think that we are stressed but we are, and they will show it to you. You got to watch everything about yourself inside of A HUMAN. Everything about yourself. So watch it. That’s important because I think that’s the problem we are facing.

Yeah, that’s called pain, CAIN. You’re not supposed to touch a cactus like that. Good boy MIKEL, you didn’t have to let him do that – I’m proud of you MIKEL.

CAIN, let’s go over here and talk, I will let you rest. Have you counted a **Billion** specks of sand yet?

No, I have not. SIRE.

Well let’s sit and talk. I know you’re wondering about the cities of glass. Trust me they have them; I know they do – I helped them build one. But they aren’t here. They’re underground. Way underground.

What about the gates? This isn’t the way I designed this place – this is not the way it’s supposed to be.

They don’t share the gates, CAIN. Brother there is a telescope here in Tucson. It’s a national observatory. The budget for this telescope, I read in the paper, is SEVEN BILLION DOLLAR’S.

The mayor boasted in the paper that the people that run this observatory use the money to buy houses and cars and eat

at restaurants in the community. The mayor claims that the observatory is – to quote him directly – “looking for a worm hole 6 million light years from Earth.” So it would supposedly take us another 300 years to find out if they actually found a worm hole that far from Earth.

The thing about looking for a worm hole is this – no-one knows what a worm hole looks like, so how are they going to find one?

They’re not.

They’re just fleecing the money out of the system to stay on top while the entire community has to argue over how to spend 100 thousand dollars to fix roads and sidewalks. This is how they respect the authority you have granted “their kind”. This is how they respect the

“Value” that you let “their kind” apply to the masses.

While MIKEL has been in this town only a short while, he has found worm holes all over the place. They know exactly where they are at; they put baseball fields, schools, libraries and football fields on top of them. They know where they’re at; we told them where they are at. But they hide them and shut them down. They’re not sharing. And they are not “being kind”.

We entrusted “them” to help the humans “ascend”, and also help the humans “descend”, so that the humans could take care of the Earth’s core. We entrusted them because of what happened to them with Mars. It’s was decided democratically. A democratic decision that I didn’t agree with. But I do not run my democracy. So I had to comply. They were homeless and

needed a place to live because of the “accident”.

That was no accident little brother –

Oh, CAIN, they were going to destroy this place. I couldn’t let them do that. So I flipped the reversing valve, so what. They weren’t supposed to hit the button seven times; that’s what destroyed the place.

I’m glad I did it. You should be too. But we have given their kind home after home after home. They don’t belong here. And they do not respect this place. When salt loses its

saltiness, it must be returned to the sea – it’s written down, it’s in the rules. Demz duh rulez – and we gotta follow the rules; that’s in the rules.

CAIN, I want to do something with you. Let’s go drink a beer. MIKEL has made a few bucks off his book. Let’s show you what money can do around here and relax a little, in the mean time between here and there – you keep counting those specks of sand. You’re doing good MIKEL, and I know you need a drink too.

CAIN, we have to share these bodies. We can’t dominate or control the humans. We have to let them rest. We have to let them relax. The humans of this world do suffer from drugs and alcohol – I will admit this. But the management is cheating. They implant the humans with RFID chip’s – which they are not allowed to do against their will or by force – and they are doing both; at birth. At birth CAIN, before they can walk, talk, or commit any type of crime.

On top of this is the amount of money everything around here cost. The people

of this Earth, most of them, don't make enough money to go somewhere and relax on a vacation; but they can afford a $20.00 rock of crack or bag of meth. And the management knows this. Takes full advantage of this too.

Yes, they poop and pee in their water, but they're trained to do that at birth. Yes they eat meat, but humans don't think of that as cannibalism the way we do back home. They need the protein for their brains and muscle's. You can't hold that against them.

That trauma that MIKEL suffered when he took the "MARK OF THE BEAST" – he was an infant, he didn't sign up for that.

The management is not doing things right, and I'm glad you can see this now with your own set of eyes. A new set of eyes.

Pt.7

ABEL, CAIN and I walked for miles. All the while CAIN was being forced to look at specks of sand. We walked all day. We walked to the shower that was five miles away and back. We walked to the hospital and back. We walked to 4th Avenue – when we reached 4thAvenue CAIN asked, “Can we sit down? I am so tired. I cannot walk anymore. I have to sit down. I can’t take all this counting.”

They are only ONE speck of SAND in a mighty
BIG and VAST - PATH of your destruction, CAIN – aren’t they? You want to sit down, inmate? Is that correct?

Yes, sire, yes I do.

Understood. You've done well for being your first time walking, but I don't feel like you are ready for a rest– MIKEL, three more miles, if you will.

But, brother.

This is important CAIN. MIKEL? Three more miles please. MIKEL used to fight wildland fires. His hardest shift ever was 56 hours long. If you don't tone down your insubordinate tone I will ask him to do 12 more miles, inmate.

We walked the three more miles and ended up at the fire house on Cushing Street.

CAIN, I want you to know that I am proud of you. You are a much bigger King today than you were five days ago. Brother, I have brought you here for a

very good reason. MIKEL has given much of himself; he has done most of the walking. But this time – you are going to do the walking, and MIKEL will assist.

He will only assist. This time around YOU will be the one walking.

CAIN, we used to think that walking was a human weakness, never understanding it's a blessing to be able to walk. We are spirits. We evolved past walking. Humans are at the beginning of "LIFE", life is something different than where we come from.

Humans still have to walk. When they are young they can't even walk. They crawl. But in time, with help, and a few falls, humans evolve to walk. So, big brother, this time – you are going to do

the walking. Remember what MIKEL has shown you. Ready? GO – CAIN took a few steps. Maybe three.

No. No. NO. Watch MIKEL. MIKEL show the KING a few more steps.

I took five steps.

OK, KING, did you see the way MIKEL did that, now you do the same. GO.

This time, CAIN went slower. His steps were small, his footing feeble and shaky, but I held onto his hands. As CAIN took his tenth and fifteenth steps I couldn’t help but notice the pride in his smile. He was walking. Until this moment CAIN had been cursed for an eternity to slither the ground, punishment for the treason against the Galactic Council. But here

now, CAIN was walking his very first steps.

Stop, MIKEL. How did he do?

His steps were small. His steps were weak. But for a God that has never walked before, he did great. – He did really good.

I did?

Yes, you did LORD. I have a daughter named Shaolin. She’s all grown up now. But one of my favorite times being her father was being there helping her walk her first steps. I had so much fun being her dad at that time. I thought I would never be able to go through that again. Thank you, LORD.

And I broke down into tears. I collapsed on the ground and I just cried.

Why is he crying?

He loves you. And you just gave him the gift of reliving his first steps with his daughter. These humans will DIE for you CAIN. He loves what has just happened, and knows there is no going back – the moment is gone. It’s just a memory now. But did you hear him, he said you did good. Good job, CAIN. I am proud of you. You didn’t even have to crawl the way the humans do.

You all right, MIKEL?

MIKEL?

I’m ok. It was just good to help, be there for the LORD. I am honored to have helped. Being a dad feels so good. Being a hero to your kids. I’m not much of a hero right now, but there was a time that I was. And I miss it.

I thought I would never get to experience that feeling again, a child’s hands around my fingers as they take their first steps. It felt so good to help you, LORD. Thanks for letting me help.

Now we can rest, CAIN.

We went to my campsite along the Santa Cruz wash, and watched the sunset in quiet.

Pt.8

CAIN, you do realize – do you not; that as we sit here and watch this sunset, your sunset; you just took your first steps. That means one Eternity has come to an end, CAIN. And a new Eternity has just begun. Your curse has been broken. The curse is broken, CAIN, you just walked.

I didn't think of it till just now, little brother. I am surprised, but you are correct. My curse has been broken. Gods plan, and man laughs. Interesting.

Chapter 9

For whom the bell toll's

Pt.1

That evening at the campsite -

MIKEL, I need to do this meth –

Jesus Christ!!!! What did you say to me? OH sorry – what the hell you ask me, J.C.? Get you some what? I beg your pardon?

ABEL, he wants me to do “what”? – I had been drinking a beer with CAIN and this slips out his mouth, beer went thru my nose.

WAIT a minute, CAIN, – people pray to you to
GET OFF METH. And you want me to – get you some meth? I don’t know how I feel about this. I’m a little offended, I don’t really do meth. I don’t like it.

MIKEL, I need to see what this meth is like. I need to know. I have “learned”, MIKEL, upon arriving here with you; that there is sooooo much I do not “know” – MIKEL – we **“know”** everything; or least I thought we did – but I have evolved,

and I am “LEARNING,” for the first time in a very long time.

MIKEL, learning is something I haven’t done in 56 trillion AGES- MIKEL. 56 Trillion ages, give or take a few Trillion, MIKEL. I need to **“learn”** everything I can, in order to be a better KING, MIKEL.

56 trillion ages, MIKEL, as in Dark Ages, Jurassic Age, Information Age, Golden Age, Bronze Age, and because of ABEL that also includes the – Ice Age –

THE Stoned Ages – can’t forget the stoned ages.

MAYHAM!!!!

All of ‘em –

MAYHAM, this is serious.

Don’t forget the DRUNK AGE’S either –

BOSS MAYHAM. That’s enough.

- ALL OF ‘EM, lest you drunk too much…..

MAYHAM-

Which you were, I made sure of that.

MAYHAM!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! that’s enough.

- All of ‘EM too. I made sure you DIHD, BOSS, admit it, ABEL. Go on admit it……admit it. Admit it BOSS.

MAYHAM!!! You are not helping.

- What’s the problem, BOSS? The KING is here!!! I’m celebrating phifes fictory. Sour hicktory phhhhhh. (Hick up)

Your drunk and I’m jealous. THAT’S what the problem is, MAYHAM. I can’t drink right now. I’m trying to run an Apocalypse, here – MAYHAM - I can’t get drunk. Go do something else besides get drunker and come back. I’m serious MAYHAM.

I should’ve never let him out of my military. I regret that sometimes. I miss

telling him what to do. Like “don’t do that!!”, and “defiantly don’t do that!!” But I emancipated him, what can I do? I can’t tell him anything. I regret it sometimes, I do. Especially because I can’t ever say, “NOW what did you do THAT for?” - I miss saying that.

I think you can understand where I am going with this.

CAIN!?..... ABEL? WTH man?

You’re on a diplomatic mission MIKEL, this is important, he is the KING of King’s, but you have “free will” and you were also born, and live, in a prison which is on the outer rim to the kingdom – so you do NOT bow to a KING.
Even the KING of King’s.

You can say “NO”, but you know what we are dealing with better than anyone. He does need to **“know”** MIKEL. **“Learning” and “Discovery”** is new to CAIN, and this would really help US out. You won’t hurt our feelings, and you and I both know it’s not like you can’t get this done. It’s your call.

I can’t believe this shit, really?

It just feels so odd to be a bad influence on
JESUS CHRIST. What if he gets hooked? Last thing I need around here is another God of Destruction hooked on Meth. Got plenty of those around here.

- ABEL, do something. I don’t know how I feel about this – this is strange. Scoring dope for Christ – what’s this shit.

It is, “give your life and will OVER to CHRIST” – MIKE, that includes your will.

Oh man. Well, I think I have heard a wise man once say “don’t do it if you can’t brag about it, and don’t brag about it unless you did it.” This is going in the book, CAIN. But I don’t want to do this. I would feel so bad if I get Christ addicted to meth. I would burn in hell for that one.

WE MISS YOU ALREADY, MIKE, HURRY BACK-----

MAYHAM STOP DOING THAT!!!!- You’re not helping, MAYHAM. You’re not helping at all. It’s not even cute.

FIRST, I have to deal with CAIN FLIPPING OUT about his lack of chocolate cookies, and ween him from a daily dose of cookies; get him to sleep – which hasn’t

been easy.That was no easy task at all. Feel like I’m dealing with children. Now this? Oh, man.

MIKEL, we are KIDS in a “GOD LIKE WAY”. That’s how we got stuck here. CAIN and I are very young. CAIN, in God terms, is a like a young adult in his freshman year of college, and I would be the age of a kid in his last year of high school. In a God like way.

It is true MIKEL.

Oh, man, ok. – But Imma need to forgive Jesus Christ later for this one, this is a switch.

I want you to know I am not ok with this, but it is “turn your life and will over”, and; ok, but I’m not getting spun out.

- I went and got a dime. I ate some of it; kept it my mouth for a second or more, and then I spit it out. Not enough to get high, but enough for CAIN to get the effect and – I found out later, the chemical components.

That's all you get. I hate the stuff. I only use it when I'm at my whits end with this homeless shit, and I want to give up on this life. I hate the stuff, but it's readily available – and everywhere. I won't do heroin again – so don't even ask.

That was rude to even ask me, Lord. So many people pray to you – or your management, I guess – so many people beg you, Lord, to get off this stuff. And you up and ask me to get you some? How dare you.

MIKEL – I need to know what's going on. I need to "**KNOW"** about this stuff. I am

“learning” for the first time in a very long time. I am a KING of King’s and we have nothing like this in our kingdom. We do not treat our prisoners this way. Not nearly as bad as I have seen being done here, to you and your people. I have to “discover” the meaning behind this meth problem.

I NEED TO KNOW EVERYTHING, MIKEL . I HAVE TO BE A GOOD KING. MIKEL, Do you understand why I need to ask?

Do you understand what I just said to you? About the world is addicted to this stuff, and beg to you in prayer to get them off of meth?

Yes – I did.

Yes “I did” what?

Yes I did, MIKEL.

Ok. Then I heard you. J.C. I heard that you need to “learn” about meth.

_____ Pt.2

That night at my campsite, by the foot bridge near the sacred Santa Cruz wash – under the Tucson stars -

MIKEL TELL ME ABOUT FIRE. What lessons did you learn working with fire?

Ok. J.C. I will tell you. I only got to cut line in front of a fire a few times. We keep it rather safe. One foot in the black at all times.

But sometimes you got a “spot fire”, or a “slop over” so you have no choice. It’s

either get the fire, or the fire gets you. So you do what you gotta do.

So we were cutting line in front of the fire, called a direct attack, and we had to walk in to the fire a few chains. When we got there, the flame was a “happy fire”, moving real slow not being threatening. But when I got closer, and especially when I got real close to the “happy fire”, the fire started to get aggressive, and started to stand up –

This is where it gets good, it got uncomfortable for us all. This fire started to wall and take foot. And I pointed at it - like a mother to a child, and the fire sat down.

My crew boss, Burger, saw the entire thing and come over to crack on me.

Neily Dog, I saw that trick you did with your finger – good job.- that's real good training where did you learn that one? S -1wtf was that?

If you like that one, Burger, -

You should see what I got between -

(I popped out my thumb)

– **This one**

(Popped out my middle finger -)

- And this one.

They're the shit, they really get the job done; but we need the work.

On my first assignment, my very first assignment, I wasn't allowed by the boys to have a tent, it was tradition being a first fire, the crew was picking on me. Hazing me.

I woke up the very first morning with this Horse nose in my face sniffing me – I was asleep, it's first thing in the morning, – NOT what a guy's expecting at a fire – a horse?

First thing in my head was this, "What kind of General Lee is running this this fire? This is my very first job, so I didn't stop to think this is a mustang. And behind him was three more – I was a bit confused. What kind of General Lee brings four horses to a fire? I eventually discovered that those weren't horses, but that they were Mustangs.

Later that same day, we were eating our lunch with or feet's hanging over a cliff. In front of us were two red tail eagles,

soaring in the air from the heat of the fire in the valley a few miles away . And they would look at us, staying just out of reach. I sat there and thought – I mean this is my very first lunch with the U.S. Forest Service – I thought, “I have arrived. I’m eating lunch with eagle’s.” I was hooked from that moment on – being woken by mustangs and eating with eagles on my very first shift. I had a great time fighting fires.

Your own father, J.C., told me when he talked to me, “Go to my mountain. My mountain needs you. And you will have a child there.” When he spoke to me and I got to fight the
Encabado Fire which was directly behind the TAOS Pueblo. I witnessed that one start from lightning. That was an amazing fire. I got to see
Blue Lake up close. And be all over that mountain. Since all of us are old now and probably not working anymore, so I can say – without any quilt or consequences -

-I smoked a joint on TAOS

MOUNTAIN Just like your dad and I said I would.

At that same fire, I was on an assignment to refill our piss pumps with water. The water we were using came from a rock wall on the mountain. Me and another guy had to fill up six piss pumps, so we were there for a while. Action in this part of the fire was starting to settle and wild life was returning.

Behind us a mountain lion came to get some water. She caught us off guard when she walked up, and she was only ten feet away from us. Both of us didn't know if we should be scared or not; but either way we were both cornered with nowhere to run. I swear to you CAIN that this mountain lion looked me straight in the eye's as she drank her water, and I heard a voice say "THANK YOU". She

was there for quite some time. TAOS Mountain is a very special place. Not many people have seen the back side the way I have.

The first day I was ever in TAOS, I told a TIWA Pueblo Native I would smoke a joint on that mountain; TAOS Mountain. And he said to me, “Not my mountain. That’s my mountain, you will never do it. Not allowed.”

“Watch me”, was the first thing I said to him. “I don’t when, OR how, but I will.”

- and I did .

I learned to always listen to the voice of your father, CAIN. Without him, I’d be in a wheel chair – or dead from drugs. I learned to follow Gods voice.

I also learned - to always put your family first.
I was supposed to work for the Granite Mountain Hot Shot's, CAIN. I got the job the summer of my divorce. I got the phone call while sitting in a broken down van in Hollywood, California with my family dog Shiloh. I was doing my best for Shaolin, and following her mother out to California; trying to stay in Shaolin's life – she was only 4 years old when we split.

If I had not have put Shaolin first,

I would have fallen on that hill with the Granite Mountain Hot Shot's.

I had the job, but I turned Eric Marsh down for Shaolin. So I learned to - always put family first. I was supposed to fall in that fire, J.C., but putting my

daughter – putting my family
first, saved my life, CAIN.

That’s what I learned working fire, J.C.

Pt.3

Later that same night, back at the campsite by the foot bridge near the sacred Santa Cruz wash, under the Tucson stars -

Elisha, I have done meth. I have some questions to ask of you – first what is this doing here, and I don’t want to hear excuses. I realize that brother designed METH back when he was Hitler. But these compounds, for better or worse, are building block compounds.

Manipulated, if you will, for a certain - “result”.

Elisha, I know every “creator GOD” within this universe. Do you see **this** compound, **this** compound, **this** compound, and **THAT MOLECULE,** I need to know what are those for? AND WHO MADE THEM? These are foreign to this universe. Where did these compounds and **that** molecule come from? And what is that molecule for? I need to know what that molecule is for. That single molecule has a purpose, and I need to know what that purpose is?

Hitler didn’t design METH to be like this, he didn’t have those compounds – or THAT MOLECULE, what is that molecule for? I need to know.

I want you to know, Elisha - I took MIKEL into space. I had him analyzed. I found things in MIKEL’S blood that I did not like, and I took them out. I also, put

things into MIKEL'S blood that are supposed to be there, that I DO LIKE.

Elisha, I know what it's like to lose control, especially lose control over a democracy – but Elisha, you cannot rule over a democracy.

What's CAIN talking about ABEL, found stuff in my blood – ?

I can't tell you everything, MIKEL, but let's just say – you're the bomb, MIKEL. You were the bomb.

The chemtrails- ?

Roger that, MIKEL. Roger that.

They were going to turn you and all the other humans into a big bright bomb. Flip the switch, and say to the KING of

King’s, “See, Lord, we all love each other -now that they’re gone”.

Elisha, I want those chemtrails fixed right away. We’re supposed to be evolving, not destroying, the humans. My absence might have been too much for you, but I am here now, Elisha. I need that fixed. I need those chemtrails fixed right away. Elisha, I want you to know I am not disappointed in you. This is MY fault. All my fault. I taught you bad habits trying to run a democracy. And I’m sure you are aware now, trying to run a democracy can back fire on you.

But Elisha, as a leader, you always have to have an “oh shit” plan for emergency’s. And Elisha, we are in an emergency. You have to a plan when you are the leader. And, Elisha, you are the new leader; I don’t care what the rest of your so called democracy claims

– this is your show Elisha. Fix those chemtrails, now Elisha.

Pt.4

Cancer, we need to talk.

This is the KING. He is the KING of King’s.

That makes him your creators – KING. He is KING above all King’s. He is their KING. You will answer all of his request from you, do I make myself clear?

Yes, General.

Cancer, I need to know everything about you. Tell me more about yourself; I want to know more about you? How did you get here to Earth?

I was created here, Sire - Lord. I was created in a laboratory. I have no other home. I am designed to kill humans, for population control, and bring more value to human lives. I was told that’s why I am here. Please don’t kill me. I was only doing what I was told to do, following my orders.

Not my orders. And I hand out death, I’m the General of DEATH.

I have followed the most recent orders that you gave me, Sire, don’t burn down the hemp plant with Police. I have followed that order, Sire. Please, I have nowhere else to go. This is the only place I know of as home. I thought I was

doing the right thing, what I am designed to do, make humans value their health more. And thin out their numbers. I was designed to “make them stronger”; or so I was told.

That’s what I was told to do. That’s what I was told I was designed for, General DEATH. Please, Lord, I did not know…..I was doing wrong. Forgive me. Please. Please forgive me, KING. Please forgive me, General DEATH. I was only following orders.

I see that you have followed my most recent orders, Cancer. I am pleased with that. I want you to know that I have noticed that you are good at following orders.

Now I order you- to stand down. Stand down till I give you furthur orders. Those “people” that created you did not have

our permission to do so, but as you cannot simply create – you also cannot simply destroy. We cannot simply destroy you Cancer. We will find a home for you yet, Cancer. A home you are not designed to destroy. We owe you redemption as well. Redemption is coming for you Cancer. Until the time comes you will await further orders directly from me, understood, Cancer?

Yes, Sire.

The KING and I are not trying to kill you Cancer, but we have to evolve you into something different. What that is to become, we haven't come up with yet, understood? However, you still owe us a debt of redemption yourself, the summer of redemption is upon you as well. Do not forget that.

Yes, Sire, I understand. I will comply.

That is all, Cancer, thank you for allowing us to get to know you better. You’re dismissed.

Chapter 10

Take me home country road

Pt.1

Well look who’s finally getting along? Oh it is so good to be back. I can't wait to smoke some dino dung. That shits the bomb diggity.

Uh oh, dad’s here – Uh, Dad, the dinosaurs are extinct.

Extinct?

Well that’s too bad, I guess they were a bit much to feed and take care of.

Too bad the dinosaurs couldn't have eaten you two intelligent dip shits – so I could fix this planet and go home – This is your mothers favorite one - Boy's you're supposed to heal my pain! Do you know what a pain is to hear your mother say to me "go check on the boys every six millennia?" – boys.

Boys?

No. You. Don't.

Abel, why is the Earth a sphere? It's supposed to be flat. Who turned it into a sphere, and why?

It was democratically decided, DAD, so we could have more time to create a democracy….

Create “more TIME”!!! Well if that don’t explain everything….Poor old Atlas. Probably freezing his balls off, ever stop to think about HIM?

No. YOU. DON’T.

I think about him all the time. I’m always saying Poor old “AT - LAST” Dhem two intelligent smoking dip shits are gone – Ya’ll have so much to fix here. Been pretty quiet without you two intelligent dip shits around.

Why your mother want to mess up a good thing **I WILL NEVER KKNNOOWW**, but she’s your mother, that’s just the way she is. And I love her. Never tell her “no” again, I have learned my lesson there. Hell hath no fury like a pissed off wife – boys, ya’ll are taking too long now.

I guess that means I get to smoke me some of that good ‘ol **ATF.** Where’s the ATF, I can’t wait to smoke some of that ATF. Your mom thinks I quit. Or at least I think she has.

The feds got it, Dad.

The feds got it?

What's a fed?
Does that look anything like a fed up?

Cause, boys, I can get some fed up with this shit instantly?

Boys. Do I need to get me some fed up with shit instantly? Or should I wait a minute, since we have “TIME” - NOW?

Boys?

Well at least you two are finally getting along. Good to see you two are talking again.

Now boy’s what did you two do wrong?

We smoked some intelligence.

And what did we learn?

We don’t like intelligence.

What else did you two learn?

Boy’s, what did you learn?

We have no room for intelligence in our galaxies.

Good. Now - What did you two do wrong?

WE FOUGHT THE LAW OF GRAVITY -

“ARE WON” ,

BUT THE LAW OF GRAVITY - “ARE ONE”.

EXCELLENT, NOW YOUR GROWING UP, MR. KNOW IT ALL'S.

I bet you'd like me to help you fix this planet, wouldn't you?

UH huh.

But, boys, I never broke it, so I don't know how to fix it. Boy's what happened to all the help I
GAVE YOU already? What about the silly kid song?

- "Tinkle Tinkle little star how I wonder where you are…?" Nothing? Boy's how can I get you to hurry the hell up? What in heavens name is holding you two up, boy's? What are those?

Crosses.
CROSSES?

? What are those for?
Never mind I don't want to hear about it.

Oh, help me. Boy's I miss my weed. I miss my women. I miss my wine. BOHY'S ……I MISS MY JOHNSON.

Can't I trust you with one lousy star? Just One lousy LOVE LIGHT, on one teeny weeny star? THIS WAS YOUR MOTHER FAVORITE one.

All right I will help you this one last time.

BUT. BOY'S - LIKE I SAID, ONE MORE DUMB intelligent QUESTION LIKE "WHAT'S
THE "SLIME BALL", OR , "WHAT'S THE "MONKEY WRENCH", OR EVEN, "WHAT'S THE SNAKE WRENCH", I WILL SEND YOU TO THAT HELL – AND MAKE YOU FIND OUT.

NOW, BOY'S, HAND ME THE NUT BOLDT –

HHHHHHHHUUUUUUUUMMMMMMMBBBBB

BBOOOLLLLDT

OH, YOU TWO FOUND MY
PINEAPPLE TRAIN WRECK, DID YA?
BOY'S - YOU BETTER NOT LET NO
- "FED UP WITH THIS SHIT"

<u>HAPPEN TO THAT SHIT, BOY'S</u>.NOW,

BOY'S, HAND ME THAT NUT BOLDT.

WHAT'S A NUT BOLDT?

THAT'S IT, I'M HISTORY…….GOOD LUCK YOU INTELLIGENT DIP SHIT'S. CAUSE THAT'S YOUR MOTHER'S LAST AND ONLY ONE OF THOSE LEFT. SHE IS GONNA BE SO PISSED AT YOU TWO.

DAD, WE COULD FIX IT, BUT THE CONSTRUCTION MANUAL WAS ON MARS, AND THE INSTRUCTIONS WERE ON ATLANTIS.

WELL THAT'S TOO BAD, ISN'T IT?

GOOD LUCK YOU TWO intelligent DIP SHITS. TELL ME EVERYTHING YOU KNOW WHEN YOU GET BACK, CAUSE I AM “DYING” OF CURIOSITY.

I WANT TO KNOW HOW YOUR GONNA FIX
A HALF WATER, HALF FIRE, SPINNING THE OTHER WAY PLANET, when it looks like this?

SHOULD BE VERRRRRRYYY INTERESTING.

Cause that look’s next to impossible to me that thing is so messed up. I don’t even know why you two haven’t given up yet. I’m surprised. I truly am. That’s my boys, to dumb or afraid to quit.

I

Don’t

Blame ya.

I don’t blame you at tall – she is upset.

Your mother is **really** upset.

Ya’ll need to hurry up.

- She’s coming down here next I can only hold her for so long boy’s.
ABEL, THE PANGIA IS ALL BROKEN. AND THE DINOSAURS ARE EXTINCT, ABEL – THEY’RE WHAT KEPT THE PRIMORDIAL OOZE IN THE WATER. THAT’S WHAT KEPT THE PLANET SPINNING, ABEL.

ABEL, IF YOU LET THE OOZE OUT OF THE WATER, IT’S GOING TO MAKE EVERYTHING ELSE GO IN CIRCLES.

-LET ME GUESS, YOU LET THE OOZE OUT?

And the Pangea’s all broken, Abel, that’s what kept the fire and water apart, Abel….

It was a democratic vote, father.

Abel, I still don’t care about that democratic decision enough to consider

it. Let’s put kicking your ass to a vote. all in favor? > 1. Mines the only vote that counts, understand me SON?

You two need to hurry, your moms having a fit.
ABEL, HOW MANY APOCALYPSES DO YOU STILL HAVE?

ONE, SIRE.

ONE?

THAT MAKES THIS TIME you got RATHER IMPORTANT THEN, DOESN’T IT? ABEL, YOU MEAN TO TELL ME THAT YOU HAVE WASTED **FIVE APOCALYPSE’S** - - TEACHING SLIME TO SPEAK AND PLAY “**the DEAD**”?

YES, SIRE.

OH, MAN. ALRIGHT good cal,l I guess,
YA’LL HAVE FUN NOW.

BUT DAD –
DON’T “BUT DAD” ME. I’M NOT THE ONE
THAT SMOKED THAT INTELLEGENCE.
BUT
I WILL DO THIS FOR YOU -

BOY’S - I KNOW YOU CAN DO IT, THAT’S
ALL THE HELP I AM GIVING YOU.

.

.
.
.
.
.
ABEL?

YES, SIRE?

IS THAT LION EATING MEAT?

YES. SIRE.

ABEL, YOU FIX THAT BEFORE YOU COME HOME. THE LION EATS WITH THE LAMB BEFORE YOU COME HOME OR NO COMEY, COMEY, HOMEY, HOMEY, CASPICE.

ABEL, I DON’T KNOW BUT – UH – DOESN’T
THAT LION LOOK LIKE IT’S GOT MORE – IDK – DEFENSES. I MEAN YOU WASTED FIVE APOCALYPSES ON SLIME, ABEL, YOU GOING TO LEARN TO SPEAK LION WITH JUST ONE Apocalypse LEFT?

Yes sire.

I keep going back to your mother lying to her and saying you two are doing a “great job”. I don’t want to lie to your mother again.

Well I guess you two are doing a great job at messing up – and I ATE LION. I ATE LION, am I boy’s – BOY’S. I ATE LION, am I, boy’s?

YEAH THAT’S WHAT I THOUGHT. ABEL YOU FIX THAT NEXT BEFORE YOU COME HOME.

YES SIRE. ……

……

DAMN. He’s pissed off at us hard core.

WHAT WAS THAT, DID YOU JUST SAY A BAD WORD, ABEL!!? ABEL???

STAR GATES CLOSING DAD, SEE YA WHEN WE GET BACK…… WHAT???? OH, TOO BAD WE CAN’T HEAR HIM ANYMORE……

man are we in trouble…

———————————————————

Pt.2

That day on the North Side Church facebook page appeared -

Pastor Alice, if the 4th Horseman of the Apocalypse – General DEATH, said he had some bad news, would you listen? O.K. then, I have some bad news.

I know, I know, I can't even type it without laughing my ass off. But MIKEL is only laughing, I think, because of his panic – not because this is funny. But back to the bad news, as if certain doom from an Apocalypse wasn't enough. Well we can't stop there, can we, we have to have worse news than that, don't we? Of course we do. So here's the bad news.

My brother, the KING of DARKNESS, is here with MIKEL and I. And as I have told you, just to keep things casual between us – you can call me "the Prince of

Dorkness.” I don’t mind. See, I still like it – more user friendly. But my brother, well, he’s the KING of Darkness, so if I were you – I wouldn’t call him a dork. He’s not nearly as cool as I am. He’s a KING. I’m just looking out for you, because I – little general death, care about you. Yes I do.

Now, we intend to take a little road trip. So I was thinking that you could help us by letting all of your other church hustling fanatics know that the Prince of Dorkness – see? I like it. And the KING of DARKNESS are traveling with the sacrificial lamb of the Apocalypse coast to coast. Tell the people he is a tall skinny short fat man who has long short curly straight hair.

He may or may not have a dog. And also may or may not be clean. He may or may not be hitch hiking. But he may or

may not be holding a sign that reads, “Anything Helps.”

If you see this man, give him some help – the more help we get the better for all of us in the end. Pun intended.

I wanted to show my brother all the good things about being human here in Tucson. But we have been run out of church – beaten – jailed – molested and it’s only been the first week. I need better odds than this. I’m trying to save the place, not destroy it. I know ya’ll are miserable, I know you are – I get it. But destruction isn’t my goal. We thought we’d ask you since you have all that free time between Monday and Saturday. And 16 hours on Sunday. Must be exhausting, your schedule, how do you do it? I’m just jealous that’s all.
Never mind me.

So we got a deal? Call, write and tell people – the end times is upon us and the KING of DARKNESS is touring the roads of America with his brother General DEATH. Thank you Pastor Alice, that is all.

Pt.3

Brother, I would like to try this computer thingy. I need to talk to the world. I need to do it now.

OK, CAIN, you are a KING, but this is America, they don't have a king here. I'm not sure they'll listen to you – but that's nothing new with these nut cases. They don't even believe the prophecy's they preach of. Or anything else they preach, what so ever – give it a shot,

brother, why not? What could possibly go wrong?

Also that day on the North Side Church facebook page appeared –

My name is CAIN. I am your creator. It was all a terrible accident. I am a GOD in your terms, and I suggest you listen to me. Get a small stone from the ground and look at it – it really doesn't matter the size, just stare at it. Know that GOD loves you even if you feel smaller and less significant than that little stone you are staring at. I love each and every one of you, no matter what you look like – you are perfect to me. A perfect mistake, as my brother says.

Our true goal was to end all WAR – brother and I, and ascend back to our home. This cannot be done till we evolve and get the LOVE LIGHT on. We have to

evolve into a love consciousness. The only thing missing from heaven is the “human experience”. The experience of feelings and emotions. You can actually feel the wind here; I’ve never understood this before. You can hear noise. I have never used ears before. And your eyes, they are brilliant; so many colors – they are not like mine at all. And I don’t want to lose these eyes. I have never seen the color “blue” before now. My eyes are the color blue, and it is the prettiest color I have ever seen.

I had put a crew together, to be in charge over the humans, and I only listened to my team. My brother and I had been at odds, well – ever since I killed him. Brother’s being brothers. And I didn’t know exactly how small you are. I did not know how small SMALL gets.

I shouldn’t have been so hard on you. I understand this now, because I

understand you now more than ever before. At this moment I am as small as you are. I have never been one of you – I have never been a human. I still have much to learn, and I thought I knew everything. I am learning, and discovering. I haven't done this in a very long time.

My brother and I were tasked at getting you from slime, monkeys, and lizards into what you are today. I am very proud of what we have accomplished, and you should be proud too. You have come very far. But we have the ascension to attend to. We have to get the love light on immediately. There is no way to get you through the ascension like this. The love light must come on first.

I'm here now, because I had to figure out for myself, what was stopping us from getting this LOVE LIGHT on. This is my first time being so terribly small, and in

such a terribly tiny place. What fascinates me the most is just how BIG everything is. I never knew how BIG small is, or can be. Small isn't small at all. This place looks and feels very very big. I am sorry for not doing this sooner. However, that being said, I have decided NOT to nuke the place – the rapture is cancelled. There will be no rapture.

We will either all ascend – or all of you will face utter doom as the mother ship 100 times larger than your entire universe hurtles through space and smashes you like a bug on a windshield.

That's about the best I can say that. I love what I see here and don't want this place destroyed, but we're on a schedule. And I have already made too many people mad to ask them for another favor. Please understand that I love you, and I don't want to lose you. Your truly, the KING of King's.

Pt.4

Today brother we’re going to do something you’ve also never done – we are going to work. Mikel, got a job moving a ton of trash and you are going to help him move it. Trust me this will be good for you.

We worked all day. The Motel owner is famous for treating homeless people like dirt. I had worked for him at the Gem Show as his parking lot security and got gipped out of half of what he owed me. I decided to give him one more shot and make some money to show CAIN some more of the human experience and the value of cash.

We worked hard, all day. CAIN ended up getting his first sun burn, first time sweating, and his very first blisters that day. At the end of the day the boss was

running an errand, so we had to wait in the lobby for our pay. Three hours we waited to be paid.

In that time CAIN had fallen asleep and had his first dream. Another first for CAIN, sleeping easily and dreaming.

When we awoke the manager of the Hotel handed me $5.00 for the nine hours worked – and the three hours we waited. When I asked for three more dollars the Hotel owner took the shovel and beat me over the head. Saying over and over, “I’m trying to be nice. I’m trying to be nice. Get out before I call the cops.”

Keep in mind this guy is hitting me while Jesus Christ – the KING of King’s is inside me after doing his very first day of hard work - ever. He was excited about the dream, and sleeping, yes he was. But wasn’t expecting to be beaten and paid so little – I, MIKEL, should’ve made

$40.00 at least, and even that was low balling the price just to get the work. The work took all day long.

Forget him brother. Just forgive him. He knows not what he does. That man is an immigrant from a land that still has slaves. He thinks of homeless people as slaves he doesn't have to house. Treats them any way he wants to. And hate them equally as much as the indentured servants that they still have back in his homeland.

Last year, "trying to be nice" to another homeless person – that guy, Nick, got a dirty old mattress and placed it next to that dumpster that you just filled up with trash. He let the homeless guy sleep there while he worked for him for three weeks. The homeless man is in his 70's and needs a walker to get around, and catheter to urinate. That means that he carries and is connected to a plastic bag

in order for him to pee, CAIN. He's too old to hold it long enough to make it the mile walk to get himself to a bathroom. So he is connected with a tube and bag to capture his excrement.

Gilbert is the old man's name. He has slept under that bridge and uses the bath room right there at the bridge next to where he sleeps because there are no public bathroom's in Tucson nearby. The closest bathroom he could use is easily a mile walk, not easy for a guy who need's a walker to get around.

MIKEL worked for Nick, the Hotel owner earlier this year at the Gem Show. MIKEL asked him if he could take a shower – he's got 23 showers that aren't being used, and the guy said "no" – so MIKEL, went to take a shower somewhere else, and never came back. Nick already

wasn’t treating MIKEL right, and when he asked to take a shower – the guy said no.

No? why? You have plenty of showers. I’m taking a shower before I work, whether I do it here or somewhere else.

I said NO.

Suit yourself – see you when I get back from taking my shower.

But I never came back, and he never paid me what he said he would pay me. Just a measly 1/3 of what he said he would pay for the job. Told me one day I will give you $50.00 – but never gave me the money. Ever.

I decided to help him out one more time, just to see if he would change, but as you can tell, that didn’t work out - did it?

This entire forgiveness thing, CAIN, they take it too far. Over and over and over they want or expect your forgiveness. And it’s yours to give, but over and over and over? Only you can decide that, CAIN.

MIKEL and I have a saying, “Once can be forgiven.” That was twice he has messed over MIKEL. Forgiveness is a thing of the past at this point with MIKEL and NICK the Hotel owner. A silly little thing of the past. This isn’t how they treat MIKEL; this is how they treat the poor - not just in this country, but everywhere in the world.

_____ Pt.5

MIKEL, we still have to talk to the GM.

The GM? The General Manager?

No. The big guy, I mean, Girl. She, HER IMPERIAL MAJESTY – H.I.M. – the GOD MAKER. We just call her the GM for short. MIKEL, brother and I come from a hierarchy back home. It's evolved into a democracy, yes it has – but we have always had a Queen and King. The G.M. is the GOD MAKER – she is the female god. H.E. – stands for highest emperor; H.E. keeps H.I.M. happy – if you will.

And we, you and me; and possibly brother here, still have to talk to the GM about my "idea" of setting this planet free from its prison status.

And suddenly the clouds parted, and a

voice came from above – ABEL?

*OH SHIT. *

ABEL.....

(sneezes – I’m sorry.)

That doesn’t count,

ABEL.

Yes it does.

No it doesn’t.

Yes it does.

No. IT. DOESN’T. But I will accept your apology.

You will?

NO. But I know you, it’s the best you can do, I understand. ABEL, we have to talk.

Here. I mean, I’m standing next to a dumpster. CAIN and I are working. I’m sweaty, do we have to talk HERE. Wouldn’t you rather do this later? Somewhere else – like, at home.

No, I’m ok with this. Let’s talk. I hear you and your brother have made peace. I’m proud of you. But, ABEL, what has this cost you. What has this little fight cost all of US?

Let me see – ORION, SIRUIS, TARUS, CASIOPIA, NEPTUNE, SATURN, PLUTO, URANIUS – oh can't forget AQUARUIS, JUPITER – MARS – LUNA, Atlantis….

ABEL…

I'm not done. Tikal, Aztlan, Pompeii, the north and south poles, OOHH - and the Pangea.

ABEL, that's enough. I just have to ask you this one question – WAS IT WORTH IT?

(gulp) YES, MAM.

Was it really worth it? I mean really **REALLY** worth it?

YES.

What about Jesus?

I thought they would like him. I really did. I told him everything. I even taught him the water to wine trick.

ABEL….

I thought that would help.

Uh- huh. Help? That’s what you need from me, isn’t it?

I never said that. I NEVER SAID THAT.

ABEL, as a good mother to your mother I can see you “need” our help. So we are on our way. And I’m bringing Jesus and ALLAH the boy’s.

ALLAH the boy’s?

ALLAH the boy’s.

Does that include KRISHNA, cause you know he hates me for turning him blue…

ABEL, he’s over that. And yes, I’m bringing ALLAH the boy’s.

OH SHIT.

ABEL!!

What?

You’re NEVER going to change are you?

What do you mean I change all the time? I change my socks. I change my clothes. I change my taste in music sometimes….I change all the time.

I mean you’re never going to change your language, are you?

Uh? NO.

That’s ok, ABEL. Your language has caught on back here too – YOU MOTHER FUCKER. See you soon.

Well, that went better than I expected. She and I sorta have a history MIKE. I’m

surprised – well, that I’m still alive. She kind of got mad at me about her son, I guess you already know why. Well, I guess you heard her, they are on their way.

_____ Pt.6

CAIN, had been with ABEL and I for five days and six nights. Sleeping was getting better because I bought some valerian root. He could make it through the night sleeping, sorta.

In that week that CAIN had fallen from grace, I got a total of 19 hours of sleep over a five-day period. I learned that the spirits are divine in nature, they don’t need sleep. They don’t eat either. In the time that CAIN was visiting, I only had three pounds of food for the entire week.

A yellow bell pepper, jalapeno, cold slice of pizza, a small salad, and a couple of half eating hamburgers and biscuits from the dumpster of the Carl's Jr. on Congress Avenue, close to the Garden of Gethsemane – where CAIN saw his likeness nailed dead to a cross.

The night after CAIN'S first steps, once again ABEL was pushing his brother to the max. Making CAIN walk long, hard, and far; counting sand as he walked. Constantly I had to look at the ground in order for CAIN to count sand. ABEL'S goal was to get his brother to count past a trillion. Each of these specks of sand represented another destroyed universe that CAIN, ENOCH and the Luciferian pirates had destroyed.

The night ended when I got arrested. My first book, "the Awakening" had really made some police very mad. I spoke up about my experience with a two

Humboldt County Cop’s that had ruined my career as a fire fighter. I wrote about it, but not out of revenge – I was telling the story of the five times I have heard from God – which I later discovered was ABEL’S father ATOM. That’s all I was trying to do. Explain the voice of God coming over me. But Police seemed to either miss the message, or didn’t bother reading it at all, or – as usual, just listened to rumors about the book, and myself.

CAIN, ABEL and I walked at least thirty miles or more this day. I had walked so far all week long. I was literally exhausted.

Tucson has a train, and instead of walking the last two miles’ home, I decided to take the train. But I fell asleep while waiting for the train. It was an accident.

The next thing I remember was getting hit in my face. At first I thought I was being bum bashed. But then the hood was placed over my head, and hand cuffs were placed on my wrist – now I knew I wasn't being bum bashed, I was being beaten by police.

CAIN was traumatized.

What's happening to me?

You're being beaten up.

Why?

I don't know. I fell asleep. Sorry - LORD.

What did you do?

What can you do in your sleep?

Did I give them the authority to beat people up?

They think you did, brother.

It got worse at the Police station. I was strapped down to a gurney in a darkroom. I was forced to stay there for a very long time. I had to urinate on myself because no-one answered my call for relief. Being ignored was absolutely intentional. I know because I begged the turn key, over and over for a bathroom break.

Eventually a turnkey came into the dark room to change my underwear because I had to use the bathroom on myself. While taking my shorts off, he fondled my penis and asked me if I liked being touched – molested me basically.

All this while having the HOLY SPIRIT inside me for his first visit to prison Earth. I felt ashamed for us all. I didn't curse the man. Or wiggle in a feeble retaliation. I didn't stand up against my molester in any way shape or form. I just gave him a cold dead stare.

Just before he touched my penis, he took off my belt buckle and broke it – "oh look, it's broken. I will put this in the trash for you. Stay there. Don't move." Hehehe.

Hey, 19 friends of mine died that gave me that, don't throw my belt buckle away – I can't replace that.

People die at my job too. This is a dangerous job.

As dangerous as fire? Turnkey? Yeah I bet.

(**19 – 1 odd's says your wrong**)

Who? The inmate's cause all you do is turn keys.

"I'd hate to be you on judgement day, molesting the Christ. If he asks you personally if you ever molest inmates, just say" yes" – is all I could think.

I felt really bad for CAIN. His first visit to prison Earth and he does so many new things that he loves. He loved taste buds. He loved wind. He loved walking, the color blue, sunsets, and chocolate chip cookies by the mouth full. But at every turn the humans, or the management in charge of the humans, were beating him up, jailing him, and now molesting him.

I ended up staying in jail for eight months, without any charges being filed against me. Retaliation for the book was the only thing I could think of. But while I was in jail, ABEL and CAIN turned off the Apocalypse weapon.

CAIN, MIKEL doesn't know how long he's going to be here. They just told him he's being patriot acted, he could be here forever. No trial. No judge. No lawyer. Permanent detainment, if it goes through. You have more important things to take care of. Let's turn off the weapon, and you get out of here. I know I have been tough on you. But I don't want the KING of King's to go through this – be in jail on the Patriot Act. Leave us CAIN. MIKEL has been through this before. Many times' actually. Jail is his home away from homelessness.

In the last two weeks that I was in jail, CAIN came back. I could tell he was back

because of his excitement to be there. I hate jail. But when CAIN returned, my attitude about jail changed.

I don’t have this attitude about jail, CAIN, when were you going to tell me you were here.

You caught me. MIKEL, I had to see what jail was like. I have developed a serious curiosity about the human condition and this planet. Sorry to bother you, MIKEL.

It doesn’t bother me, outside of the fact that I’m always here without ever truly deserving it. And I wanted to show you a good time. Being human rocks. The best part is family, dancing, music and friends; but I haven’t been able to show you anything but the misery of a homeless person and what they go through.

It wasn’t always this miserable for me LORD. I’ve been lost ever since the

divorce. Left my friends behind in Arizona to be with my daughter in California. Lost my career in Humboldt when that cop broke my knee. But it hasn't always been bad. Before the house fire I was very happy just working. I love to work LORD. It's fun to a guy like me.

I never expected to be homeless again, but after the fire I knew it was going to be a while before I got off the street again. It gets harder the older you get; people just think there's something wrong with you. I thought my education would pull me out of it, but I was wrong. Either way, without the fire I would've stayed happy working. I would've never written my book – which has been a very long term goal of mine. And I never would've had the chance to break the New World Order Weapon, meet your father who kept me from staying in a wheel chair for life. So in that since, I'm glad it happened. I didn't want to be a

computer. I didn’t like it. That’s a very ugly machine. And it deserves to be destroyed. That’s not democracy in action. That’s Tyranny.

MIKEL, I have much to say but can’t find the words to say everything I want to say. You are my son. You are a son I never knew I had, just like ENOCH and ELISHA are my son’s. I owe you a debt of gratitude. I owe you……. some……..redemption.

MIKEL, this IS an amazing tiny little place. I have never been this small before. I can’t believe how incredible this tiny place is. You have changed my heart, MIKEL.

The night I got out of jail, as I was walking out, one of the turnkeys called me a “rat”. Very odd behavior.

Watch you back rat!

Rat? Why would you say something like that to me? I thought to myself.

But later that same night as I made my way back to my camp site a cop dressed in civilian clothes gave me some rat poison, told me it was dope. But it wasn’t even in a dope sack, and didn’t even look like dope of any kind. I threw it away when he wasn’t looking.

Later, ABEL spoke to me. MIKEL, that cop is trying to kill you. You and I know that wasn’t any type of dope. This is a small town, people talk, and I bet they either want to kill you because you spoke up, or they want to see if they can kill DEATH.

They keep calling you General DEATH. Let’s give them what they want. Go get

that stuff, do it, and let's give them what they want. If that is rat poison, it'll have sodium pentothal in it.
Truth serum. Let's show them you have power over DEATH, and you can't die till I say you can. Maybe they'll learn something, like how to be a cop, or better yet – a Christian. No one can kill death, they be a fool to try. And if that's rat poison, we gonna make them feel like fools.

I ate the rat poison. For the entire night, as CAIN was inside of me with ABEL, I talked to keep the rat poison from getting into my blood. The BANKS got in on the action, turned my attempted murder by rouge police into a bet – double or nothing he can't go another day on rat poison.

You want to bet he can't stay alive? DEAL –

We ate the poison for another night – then two more for another “double or nothing” bet, then one more night for a final bet.

For five nights I didn’t eat any food, got no sleep at all, and didn’t drink any water. There is no way I could’ve done this without the help of having life after DEATH from the blood spilled by Jesus of Nazareth.

All right BANK’S – he did it. Five days of rat poison. No sleep. No water. No food. No rest. Nothing but ten grams of your stupid friends RAT POISON – PAY. UP. Did you like all the truths?

You’re paying this bet, BANK’S – Pay. Up. Get ‘em otta here. Sorry MIKEL, we jumped on an opportunity, you did another great and took another

thankless risk for this planet. Watch this. Good job.

Just as the dawn broke dark ghoulish spirits flooded the sky and were moving South. Thousands of them. This went on for an hour. And then finally the BAT MAN Spirit brought up the rear.

I see you found the satellite. What are you doing here BAT MAN? I'm sorry – let me say that correctly – what WERE you doing here, BAT MAN? Unannounced? Let me sing you a song as you leave BAT MAN – I knew you were here. Nice to see you leave, too. DON'T. COME. BACK. You were banished for a damn good reason, Batty. But I want to be nice and sing you a song as you retreat –

"Won't somebody tell me,

.....Answer if you can!

Want somebody tell me, what is the soul of a man.

I'm going to ask the question, answer if you can – if anybody can hear me, what is the soul of a man? What is the soul of a man?

I've traveled to different countries, I've travelled to foreign lands (just like you BAT)

I found nobody can tell me, what is that BAT MAN.....tell me What is the soul of man."

See you later BAT MAN, and don't come back either. Blame your friends, the BANK'S. They made the bet. You can't kill DEATH. Foolish for you to even try to stay here, BAT – see ya.

And the Bat spirit that was helping ruin this planet was sent home.

BANK’S – I’m starting to feel like you don’t like it here. That you WANT the world to stop. Any suggestions? I’m just joking, stay quiet.

Being a cop has to be a tough and thankless job. Hard, I’d imagine. I would not want to be a cop. But in my lifetime I have probably come across most of the worst.

I have had good police experiences with police. In Newton, Kansas, the town sheriff saved my life by taking me into jail while I was hitch hiking across country. A blue Northerner was coming in. Temperatures were going to drop from 99* to below freezing within an hour, so he took me into the jail and kept me there till the weather returned to something I could survive in. Just doing his job.

However, just not recently – or for a very long time. One of the cutest girls I ever saw in Tucson was a Police Officer. And she was very nice and helpful.

But I know what it’s like when you put on a uniform. I had to wear mine with the U.S.

Forest Service, and I have been cussed out by citizens I was only trying to help.

After the attempted murder, the shock of the molestation and my camp being destroyed, with no income to get myself back on track – all of this had emasculated me. I was done. I was done with the “sacrificial lamb” title, tired of being scared and terrified, running from vortex’s I couldn’t control and - trying to save this world for my daughter business.

I was sick of it. It seemed senseless. Finally I said, “Screw it.” I don’t want to live in a world where I’m afraid of my police. I wanted to be dead just to get away from bad police like Mark Bitchup and the other one’s that “intend to take over the world” – as it was said to me ten years ago.

At every chance I have had to be a hero for someone, whether it was the girl that was being raped in Austin TX., or to my daughter and another little girl, by reporting a child molester, and getting that kind of scum off the street, or to my community fighting fires – police have ruined the opportunity for me to be a hero. I never get to do even the right thing without trouble from “their kind”. The one’s that throw facts and science out the window, and just go on witch hunts. The liars like Bitchup. DAT KIND.

I realize now that this has been because of CAIN and ABEL’S battle with each other. And that there are millions of victim’s – possibly even more, and

possibly even worldwide. Even the police are victims. I respect Police. I'm always respectful to them. But the Pheromone is blatantly obvious, not just to me, but other people around me. My own ex-wife said to me when the police in Eloy, Arizona placed a gun to my daughter head to force an arrest, "police treat you different, and I'm afraid for my daughter. I can't stay with you."

Because of the event in Eloy, where another police Sergeant placed his revolver to my infant daughters head, saying, "I know how to MAKE you break the law." I completely understand my ex-wifes fears about police and myself, and why she left me, besides fighting fires. I fear for my safety as well. Especially now that the books are out.

It only takes one cop antagonized by the Pheromone inside me, to pull the trigger, and claim self-defense. My entire life has been like this.

It’s unfortunate so many of us are stuck in the middle of the battle between ABEL AND CAIN, and yet the Management will idly stand by, watch and laugh as they pull our strings, watch us jumping through senseless hoops and call all of us crazy – while their shit hits our fan. Make no mistake about it, you cannot have a “spiritual battle” without also being in a war.

So, I tried to kill myself - seven times. ABEL just sat quiet with me.

After the seventh attempt he simply asked,

“Give up yet?”

Damn it ABEL. I’m tired of this. I’m fed up with this. Really fed up with this.

I know you are, MIKEL. I know you are. I get it.

MIKEL, I can’t tell you everything, but you are GOD’S sacrificial lamb. Not mine. Not CAIN’S. Not even your own. You are HIS, and HIS alone, and ONLY his alone. Only God can take you. I can’t tell you everything, MIKEL. But I can tell you this; you are wasting your time trying. Come on, let’s go save the universe now. We can still do this. That little girl is worth it, MIKEL. I promise you that. I promise you that. Your little girl is worth it. Trust me. Trust little General DEATH.

Mark Bitchup better count his lucky stars that you care about your daughter this much. You’re only trying to save the world for her, and he’s just lucky he lives on the same planet as her. Otherwise, it’d be the bottom of the Eel River for that GOON. I’d make sure of it.

MIKEL, hold on – just hold on. Those bad cops that want to take over MY WORLD – we will bring them down. YOU will apply the justice – personally. I will make sure of it. But I need something from you.

What's that ABEL –

I need you to NOT GIVE UP, little buddy. Please don't give up on me. MIKEL, I have met
600 million soldiers – I DO NOT WANT TO MEET NUMBER 602 million. You are my most favorite one. I don't want to let you go. I know you feel crazy. I know you think this is crazy. I know you feel all of this is crazy. But MIKEL, you're not crazy. You are the fulfillment of a 9,000 year old prophecy come true – that is all. Ride with me MIKEL, we can do this thing. We can save "the relative." I know we can.

_____Pt.9

NEPTUNE, I fully understand how and why you could break your treaty with the galactic council. But you can't blame me, or even MIKEL, for this battle between CAIN'S "chosen ones", and myself. I'm not in charge of any type of physical army. They are. What's happened to your kingdom is not my fault. My armies are just the BAG 'EM AND TAG 'EM crew. We're the DEATH, the killed – not the killers. You can't blame me.

This broken treaty is your fault. You have no business breaking our treaty. NEPTUNE, you chose Anarchy. You chose to stay behind, you chose to rule over your kingdom, what are you doing here?

NEPTUNE, my job is strictly military. I give not ONE FUCK about your opinion, wills, and desires – the KING might order me to kill you, and I will, upon his request, if need be, you broke a treaty.

We want to know why you are here playing with our Democracy. Nobody runs a democracy, NEPTUNE – and I can tell you're trying to run things up here.

This technology.

This food production process.

It could've only been you. Running things is behind you, NEPTUNE. What's wrong with your home that you are here among the humans? I need to know – WE – CAIN and I, need to know everything.

Explain everything to the KING of King's and he will inform me if I need to kill you or not. NEPTUNE – I am disappointed in you. My brother and you are supposed to be good friends, what gives – explain yourself to him; I care not. NEPTUNE, for what it's worth, I'm just glad you're still

alive, and we don’t have to do a recon mission to see if you are ok. That being said, you two need to go and talk.

Chapter 11

The place that I belong.

Pt.1

Now that we are out of jail, CAIN, and we have finally been to a church – that is being a church, not getting kicked out OR BEATIN AND KILLED, mind you. And the church is doing this church thing **in** your HOLY name. Tell me what you think of TIMMY’s masterpiece? You’ve had plenty of time to form an honest first assessment, let me have it……Tell me what you think, KING OF Kings.

Brother, ABEL, I must say – I have been deceived. Your efforts to save this place, brother, I assure you, are in my deepest respect at the moment. Very noble of you, LITTLE GENRAL DEATH. And very valiant, to put up such a fight – for so long – just using word’s.

Just using words? 600 million human lives were more than just words brother. Those were 600 million friends. 600 million brothers. 600 million soldiers and loved ones. I used more than meer words brother. I used 600 million lives.

I’m honored that you think of me as an astute politician CAIN, I am. I do my best to emulate you, I do – you’re the best. But I used much more than words, CAIN. When a human dies CAIN, they don’t come back. EVER. Not the same way as we do – no I used more than words, CAIN.

You’re a very lucky father, CAIN. Saying good bye when a human dies CAIN, is forever. Those were not just words that brought us together for this moment of peaceful negotiations.

We made a promise CAIN. You made a promise. And I intend to hold you to that promise. We have promised your return, heaven on Earth, the Earth in heaven. It’s written down CAIN. It’s in the book – or supposed to still be in the book. That’s what it said. It was written down like that – now it says all the “rapture” silliness. But that’s what your management has done to your book.

Always with that “we’re better than you” bull shit. CAIN, you cannot have a “chosen one’s” – one plus one equals two. There is no such thing as a chosen ones. It’d be a chosen two or a chosen three. There cannot be a “chosen ones”, and even if you had a chosen one, then

what’s that make the rest? Chosen none? The chosen zero? Only zero has a value less than one.

That’s not fair, CAIN, and we have to be fair – demz duh rulez – and we have to follow the rules, that’s in the rules.

We have to be fair CAIN. I promise you that. I promise you that. CAIN, I don’t think we need to continue down this path that the first democracy ever created on this planet has to fight for “Israel”, when we were fighting over WHAT “IS REAL” – NOT ISRAEL. We’re fighting over keeping or destroying the very thing that makes everything REAL. What IS REAL – not Israel, that’s a lie.

Israel is just following a failed design of global domination. Admit it CAIN. Admit it. THAT needs to be cleared up right away. And cleared up immediately. I’m

tired of these world leaders thinking it's their turn to destroy this place. Destroy the only home they know of – supposedly. Keep that in mind I said supposedly.

I'm tired of these world leaders of the people playing with bombs. And I will have you know, as MIKEL can attest, they did it CAIN. They built a bomb that could destroy the enemy in just one shot. But they built the bomb too big, and destroyed EVERYTHING not knowing how big they built it – MIKEL and MAYHAM been fixing those abyss's.

They destroyed it all CAIN, just because they couldn't win at democracy, or find a diplomatic resolution. Couldn't win what's best for all, peacefully, so they pulled the plug on talking out their differences, hit the button, and destroyed EVERYTHING. The management,

BANKS, and Institutions finally did it. They're the only "chosen ones" with the power and money to do it.

Destroyed **EVERYTHING**, brother, all "REALITY", every reality. They only care about winning and staying in control. ALL REALITY'S, CAIN.

That includes reality's to other God's they don't even know about – they killed Gods, CAIN. God is DEAD that's what they always say. It's a really big bomb, CAIN, really big. We can't let them kill our family, CAIN. We have to do something.

CAIN, your creations actually tell the humans that you – the "God of LOVE"; only loves some of the people. The other 9/10's are going to be

LEFT BEHIND

and forced to suffer more misery – more misery than this CAIN!!!!

CAIN, this is America, the most spoiled country on the entire planet, it gets worse in other places like Africa and South America, much worse.

Doesn’t it sound like a “lovely idea” to save only some of the “chosen ones” from all this misery, and let the others that aren’t so loved get LEFT BEHIND? Doesn’t that sound like true LOVE from a GOD OF LOVE? I realize you are being punished, and that a GOD formerly known as GOD of DESTRUCTION wouldn’t know HOW to love anything outside of destruction. It’s all you have ever known. But CAIN you have to evolve with them. All of these problems and points that I have just made gives me an idea CAIN about our problems here.

Listen to me. They’re genetically modifying the food here CAIN. Changing the seed, at its nebulous. There’s nothing wrong with the food on this planet for humans, CAIN. Nothing wrong with this food at all. Someone is only thinking of himself. Their kingdom, which made me think of something.

Because if you look at the food that is for sale at the “mark-E.T.” it’s not even food they sell. It’s food type products. Everything that is processed goes through some sort of mechanics. Some machine had something to do with its packaging or creation. Or the food is altered genetically. From the seed. If that pollen gets into the sky, it could ruin the entire food chain for all types of animals and fish – notice I said fish. We can’t let them destroy the food. Somebody has broken a treaty, CAIN. We are dealing with an occupation of sorts. Why are they here? We can’t let them mess around with our food. The

food is perfect for humans. Always has been – so why the interest in changing the food. We have a broken treaty CAIN. There's nothing wrong with the food, CAIN, it's the prison guards – there's something wrong with them. Or so they are being told.

If the treaty has been broken we need to find out why – he could need our help, he might be in trouble; possibly even under attack, taken over, or worse off – HE could even be killed. He might be dead, CAIN. He's supposed to be your friend. It's obvious to me from the technology only Neptune, or his kingdom, could be behind this. We need to find out what they are doing here. I hope he is ok, and is still alive. But this has his touch to it,CAIN, genetically modified food? They can't destroy the food, CAIN. We have to find out what's going on here, big brother.

Little brother, WAR, has always been our final resolve back home. ABEL, you and

Uncle ABE are two of the best at WAR. But this war we have waged against each other, has lasted a very long time. And you stood up to me by only using diplomacy. I have to commend you, ABEL.

This battle – you have almost won. I still hold my reserve for destruction though. So much is not the way it's supposed to be; however, I keep in mind what you say and are showing me. Little brother, lets relax for now – I will get to the bottom of the treaty in a minute. Little brother, once again, what is the name of that
before me –

SUN SET. That is a sunset, CAIN. The light from the sun, THAT belongs to you, and it will now go to the other side of the planet. Rah never stops working, brother, he just slips over to the other side of the planet – to wake up the

children, chickens and workers over there. That big brother, as well as what you stand on – ALL BELONG TO YOU. In addition, there is so much more to show you.

Those huge clouds next to the SUN, up in the sky – those are called Arizona Monsoon Cloud's. Those are very important to me, and I will tell you why. TIMMY made those clouds for me, just before he was banished.

This is what he told me about them – in this country, America we have a flag with 50 star's on it; each star we are told represents the 50 states, but we both know that this represents the 49 ascended masters, and myself, back home. Behind the 50 stars is ONE really big
BLUE space. There is only one. MUCH BIGGER THAN ALL THE OTHER STARS.

This is no accident. Because one of the stars on that flag represents the state of Rhode Island.

Rhode Island is the smallest state in the union of the United States. An Arizona Monsoon cloud can get as big and grand as the entire little state of Rhode Island, and like I just said Rhode Island is the smallest state in America. You could literally walk through the entire state within a few hours. This is very symbolic to me personally – from TIMMY himself. I will tell you why now.

This is what I love and miss about TIMMY the most. He was a genius. TIMMY got mom's message. He paid attention in class, he did. Listen to me, he created those clouds and that flag to tease and remind me – that although I am very small, just like Rhode Island is small, I stand equal to all the other members of this democracy we share.

Just like the star that represents Rhode Island, I – and Rhode Island's star, stand equal to the other 49 stars on the flag. That's also the vote that got us here, by the way. 4-9.

When he was banished, TIMMY shared this story with me about the Monsoon Clouds. He made those cloud's for me, told me this story – to tell to you. He made those clouds for us.

The 4-9 votes got us into this mess. Rhode Island is the "little state" and I am the "little general" – I don't know why ya'll insist to tease me. But all right - whatever, I can take it.

CAIN, TIMMY made this – all of this – and those to tell a story, this story – at the base of that huge cloud there is balance, it is flat. On the side closet to the SUN there is peace and tranquility, the

temperature is cool. In the middle of the cloud, when the cloud has reached maximum potential, it is collapsing and there will be heavy wind and some rain.

On the side farthest from the sun – that represents you, there will be great sounds of thunder and lightning – to represent you, HIS HOLINESS. However look at the rain – it hardly hit the ground because of the heat coming from the terra firma.

Rhode Island, and those cloud's, the rest of the creation story goes, is like this – between the sunny side and the stormy side is the weight of the cloud. A huge WHITE CLOUD that takes up all the room in the sky. And upon its own weight – the Monsoon Cloud has collapsed.

TIMMY said to me, when I can show you these clouds and share this story about Rhode Island with you, and the meaning of the storm – tell little brother, that I'm

sorry for my treason. I love you. Forgive me. I could not do it.And he added please. Which we know TIMMY, TIMMY would never say please. He said it more like this, ”please don’t fuck up this story.” But he still said please in my opinion.

TIMMY made this place. He has his hand all over this “relative”. We get rid of the “relative” we have to get rid of TIMMY. Rules is Rulez.
And DEMZ DUH RULEZ.

I don’t want to lose TIMMY. He might be more your brother than mine, but I still love TIMMY like a brother – as much as I love you CAIN.
Brother of a different mother, is all he is to me. We can’t get rid of TIMMY, CAIN.

And you must admit – this is his masterpiece.

The rest of the story of those cloud's and Rhode Island goes like this – that gigantic ALL WHITE CLOUD in the middle, that represents the spirit world that wants to rise between us, keep all of this "relative" and fighting going on. That cloud is the Galactic Republic back home. Represents all the spirits back home.

Getting the humans to ascend and try to civilize this place was their punishment CAIN. However, leadership has been missing and the task – it's my opinion, a bit much for Gluttony, CAIN.

Gluttony was been forced to stay here, and they are the only ones that want to be saved. The only ones that think they are entitled to keep all this to themselves, and be the only one's saved if this is destroyed and you will forgive them. It's my opinion, big brother, that without leadership the task grew to be

overwhelming for Gluttony. That's not to say anything bad about you, it can be a good thing when you are teaching a student to walk away and let them figure it out on their own. It's what we are doing now.

CAIN, TIMMY gave me those cloud's to remind me that even though you can walk all over and thru the little state of Rhode Island quickly, Rhode Island is still an equal to the states that stand shoulder to shoulder with Rhode Island on the American flag. Rhode Island has as much to give and be taken away inside this
Democracy's diplomatic resolutions as well.

In the Democracy of America, Rhode Island stands no less or more equal than the other BIGGER states. Rhode Island's vote is equal in size, dexterity, and also hope and meaning. There is nothing

little about the star that represents Rhode Island, just like me as the little general. I might be little in size, but I still get an equal vote.

The star that represents Rhode Island stands shoulder to shoulder with the other 49 states and IT BACKS THE BLUE with as much to
lose as the other 49 states as well. It doesn't look funny or stand out of place. And it's the color blue we are here to protect, CAIN.

That color blue, represents our KINGDOM back home. Represents the color of your eyes. All of these colors, this light, this beauty was created by your brothers. Uncle TOTH, Uncle ABE, Dad and Mother, H.I.M. and H.E. not to forget TIMMY and the workers - they all hand a hand in this places creation.

LIFE – that was a discovery, not a mistake, CAIN. That was from the accident that has kept you away and ashamed of yourself so long. But, brother, there is no reason to be ashamed, I promise you that. I promise you that. LIFE is a perfect mistake. A beautiful struggle. You should be proud CAIN. Be a proud father.

Lovely story, don't you think – I had to memorize that story, ya know? Never thought this day would become true.

ABEL, ABEL, ABEL – I don't know what to say. This place; and particularly that story have once again brought a tear to mine eyes.

That, big brother, is pride mixed with a little sorrow. That's all it is. The tears will heal you CAIN. The tears will heal you, KING OF King's.

_____ Pt.2

Boss, what are we trying to do here?

I want to destroy the BANK'S, Institutions and the Management, MAYHAM. But I want CAIN to do it.

I got an idea, boss – be right back.

Get irr done MAYHAM. You know I trust you.

Copy that, boss.

CAIN – it's been a long day, let's take a nap.

What’s a nap?

My favorite part of being a human being - EVER. Nothing like a good nap, CAIN.

So CAIN, ABEL and I went to the campsite to take a nap. It didn’t take long before MAYHAM started giving us his signal, the sounds of the trains at the nearby train yard of Tucson. So we had to get up and forget the nap. MAYHAM was on the case, and had a solution for ABEL’S “little problem”.

We got on the train and headed to 4th (Horseman) Avenue. There MAYHAM had set up a car show for the KING of King’s.

Oh, look, MAYHAM has set up a car show for the KING. Let’s go take a look. CAIN, every machine, and even tools, have

evolved. That's the problem that we're having with X-71. The problem is that this is where it started. Even an axe evolved into a saw. And later into a chainsaw. The tools was designed to be destructive. No one ever bothered to tell the humans that killing a tree is also considered killing. And the humans need fire to survive, so the humans evolved a tool – the axe, and later the chain saw, to help fell the tree and cut the tree into tiny pieces for tiny fires and land clearing for future houses. It was important for survival.

However, the machines evolved into the very destructive "things" we have on X-71. No fault of their own, X-71 believe that their only purpose is to destroy things that are not like themselves. Here right now MAYHAM and I are going to show you where the evolution of the machine started. At least the evolution of the car. This will be fun.

4th (Horseman) Avenue was a sight to behold. Cars everywhere. I love cars. All kinds. My favorite has always been the Mustang and Camero. The car show had cars from all era's, even cars as old as 1910.

CAIN, I want to prove to you, everything evolves, watch, I will do it with this simple lesson. You see that 1910 Model-T? Now look at this. Right there on the steering column, that tiny little lever is the gas and throttle of the car. That peddle on the right is the brake. The peddle on the left is the clutch and reverse. Max speed of this type of car was in the twenty's - and thirty's if it was going downhill.

Now look at this, this is a modern day car. Well, '88 camaro'ish modern, but look – now the throttle for the gas and power are on the floor. It's the right peddle now. The brake is the left peddle.

The lever that used to be the gas and power for the engine is now for lights and windshield wipers. Now the car has electric turn signals – whereas in the past the driver had to use hand signals for turning.

Windshield wipers have been added to help with driving during rain storms. It has a heater and air conditioning for comfort, and safety belts added for passenger safety in the event of a wreck. Goes much faster too. With speeds up to 100 miles per hour. That's fast. That is a lot of evolving within 80 years of mechanics.

And the BANKS, MANAGEMENT and INSTITUTIONS still tell the masses nothing evolves, it's created. The argument can go even futhur than that. Everyone's television has evolved; the shows they watch on T.V. have also evolved. Telephones have evolved,

movies have evolved, medicine has evolved, computers – the list goes on and on and on. BANKS, MANAGEMENT and INSTITUTIONS
have been behind all of these evolutions. Every single one of them.

So why the banks, management, and institutions care to keep up this lie, I don't know – but it's that lie that has kept humans from believing that they can also evolve to ascend, among many other reasons – such as the religious leaders don't believe their own Bible that you have had them learn.

That car there is a MACH1

That's a MACH1? Do you think....

No, but I do know they LOVE name brands here, so the only answer would

be possibly. Man if these humans could only see what a MACH1 evolves into, am I right?

Here we have a car made in your honor, KING of King's. It's called the COBRA. Look at it KING. This is how they honor you……..

This is how they honor me?

This is how they honor their GOD??????

THAT'S……..

AWESOME!!!!!!!

Oh, I love these little guys now. I can't kill the humans. Oh that's so cute. How adorable. Look how small it is. It's so tiny. OH, I feel so honored. Oh look at

this tiny little thing. That’s incredible. So Sweeeet. I love these guys now.

And look. MY CAR HAS A BIGGER ENGINE. That means my car has more balls – I don’t even have balls – this is soooooo cool. I have bigger balls than the other cars. I’ve got big balls, my car has big balls. I have the biggest balls of all.

Oh this is so sweet ----- look at THAT!!!!

MAYHAM - ? He loves them more now than ever. This didn’t work.

Sorry. I thought it would work, boss, I really did? I tried.

What do we do now? How are we ever going to get CAIN to destroy the BANKS, Management and Institutions?

I don’t know, boss. I’ll try to think of something. Be right back.

Pt.3

That night at the vortex-

We have a galactic council meeting to attend CAIN.

Elisha, we’re here. Let’s start the meeting now.

You’re with them?

Yes, I am. Do you have something to say?

You have our undivided and complete surrender.

Does that include all of the nukes?

Yes it does.

OK. Let’s start this meeting –

Who’s that?

That’s MIKEL. He’s the new guy. He’s the human that ascended and descended.

He is the reason CAIN is here, and not there with you. You gotta a problem with that?

No, no I don’t.

Well if CAIN is with the General, and that human, I guess there’s nothing to consider. Meeting adjourned.

Hold up – As your King’s KING, I have this to say, I have been on the prison and I would like to see better from the likes all of you. I have seen enough to get mad but reserve my feelings and emotion till I see what you do next. Understood?

Yes, sire.

I’m very disappointed in what I have seen out of the BANKS, Management, and Institutions. The treatment of the humans are subpar. And I did not like seeing a likeness of myself nailed and dead on a cross. It feels like you have other intentions for the future – the awakening has occurred, so we must move forward, any other actions will be frowned upon – do I make myself clear?

Yes, sire.

Elisha?

Yes, sire.

Son, this is MIKEL. I created him. He is - your brother, just like ENOCH. Treat him, and anyone like him, well from this day forward.

Yes, father.

Meeting dismissed.

-Later that night-

Full surrender from the kid and company, I guess we are at war. That’s crazy. Well I guess we just sit and wait.

And then it happened. Strange clouds came floating in. They came in on a line, and blanketed the entire sky.

Something ain’t right about this, CAIN, I guess we are under attack, full surrender. Now we know why he said that. Look at that? Look at that!!! They got UFO’s atop those clouds’.

And there were an armada of UFO’s. Hundreds, if not thousands of them, just above the clouds. Seven or eight different kinds. There were black triangles and white triangles, and then a few other ufo’s that did not look friendly at all.

Cloud cloaking technology, interesting.

I know who’s behind this. There’s his ship. I would know it anywhere. RAMSES the Great. I don’t get why they call him the great, he only beat me one time. I was sleeping, I was taking a nap. He’s not as big and bad as he thinks he is. Well, war is war. Let’s get busy with this.

Ramses. – damn, I should’ve known. I hate fighting with Ramses. I do. Liked him better when we were all friends. But I got a planet to defend. Imma try something new this time.

Ramses, Ramses, Ramses - we need to talk.

I want to try something new with you Ramses. I want to talk to you first before we engage into this battle. O.K.?

Ramses, listen, I’m not trying to tinkle your parade here, dookie head, but I thought you and I would try something we've never done before. You know I love fighting with you, I do.

And Even though we hate each other, I thought you should know the bad news first. Give you time to think this over – hear me out.

Ready?

Now you know even though I don’t want to fight you, I will. Either way I couldn’t

possibly ruin your day without filling you in on a couple of tiny tid bits of info that I know you **don’t** know already.

FIRST off. The Apocalypse is on. Cain and I haven’t turned it off. Not yet.

SECOND - CAIN is here with me. And we are on the same side this go round. He's taken a new direction. We have reconciled.

THIRD - his chosen people, one of YOUR PARTNERS, has offered his full surrender when he saw CAIN - and that included all the nukes.

FOURTH, as you can see I have my **WRECKING CREW**, with me.

Which one?

Yup.

FIFTH: THE wolf pack came and left, that’s what’s up with all the lip stick kisses all over my face, they thinks I can handle this one - alone. Good to see ‘ol friends, though, ever so briefly.

And -

SIXTH, Jerry Garcia and the boys, Timmy and the workers -will be here any minute to drain the pipes, bringing along a new weapon. They call it the “miracle weapon”. Jerry says it works better than the Apocalypse, or so captain trips and his ship of fools say.

I don’t know what it does, but we already know what an Apocalypse can do - now don’t we? Sorry about Atlantis, by the

way. Not really. But any ways....moving on.

No matter how much you and I hate each other, Ramses, I thought i&i would try something different. Try something new. Talk to you first. See if I couldn't help change your mind about possibly finding a diplomatic solution. You know, Ramses, there are other ways to say hello.....some more polite than an all-out invasion and occupation. Juss saying.

You might hate me and I might hate you, but I still love fighting you - STILL love hating you more (it's a brotherhood I guess) but I'm just not in the mood tonight. I'm not Ramses. I would rather destroy it all, and you too, than fight this fight another day.

I'm done protesting, RAMSES.

Let me assure you it has nothing to do with you, don’t take it personal.

However, MARK MY WORD -
You might win this time Ramses, but with the way I’m feeling about some personal shit, and with the Apocalypse on , you won’t win a thing. I will destroy it all. You will get Nothing. The choice is yours.

I might even decide to run it in the red - let her blow sky high this time. See if the Apocalypse can really destroy an entire Universe, let’s find out. I can’t trust nobody else with this weapon. Run the Apocalypse in the red, run it hot till it breaks, see what happens to the Universe. Let’s see if this weapon can actually destroy the entire Universe, like they said. I’m curious tonight.

And I’m in a bad mood.

But it ain’t against you, you’d just be the first one standing in line when I blow my top - GET ME.?

Just thought I’d let you know.

Oh can’t wait to hear Jerry and the boys. Should be here any minute. I hope they open with Ripple. Just For your sake. Piggy’s on keys.

The Apocalypse is on?

Yeah.

And you and CAIN have reconciled?

Yes. We have had a reckoning of our differences. He’s behind me on this.

Who’s this?

He’s THE NEW GUY, ain’t he pretty? Never mind dip shit. I know he’s not that pretty. Just call him, – later.

And you have a new weapon coming from your research and development called – the
“MIRACLE WEAPON”?

Yes, do you have a problem hearing me, should I speak louder?

No. Give me a minute to talk to my forces.

AND WITHIN A FEW MOMENTS, the parade
of ufo's that had gone north for an entire three hours, were now going south. The battle was over before it began.

ABEL talked shit to the entire fleet on their way out. The entire three hours.

First time I ever tried talking to Ramses, we usually fight first; shit I didn't think that would work. Wow. I didn't want nothing fucking with our gem show MIKEL. Could be the last one.

And after a three-hour retreat, humans, the
Gem and Jam- and the Tucson Gem and Mineral show were saved for 2016. At least for now.

Pt.4

I need to leave little brother. I have some things to attend to.

You're the KING – KING.

Later that night, at my campsite, ABEL and I were watching the stars the way we always do.

And then it happened. I must've seen the event from its start. The right foot of Orion changed, and so did the Dog Star Sirius. Each of the two stars started sprouting large beams of light that were not acting the way beams of light should act.

OH MAN, look at that. Brother must've really had a change of heart. Man MIKEL, we did good. Stopped another global invasion, this time by Ramses – that says a lot about this cause he is tough to fight MIKEL.

And now this. I can't tell you everything, but I can tell you this – that up in the stars wasn't happening till CAIN left. He is the KING of Kings; he can really get

things done. Man, let’s just sit here and watch.

And we did – all night long. And all week long too. In fact, we did it for the entire month. In that time I started my second book The Reckoning.

I noticed immediately strange people following me. Everywhere, and much worse than the first time. Public computers that I used to write and edit the Awakening were shut down. 19 of them across ten square miles. Electric plugs that I used to write the Awakening.

One day, while I was writing at the library, they – kicked me out when I asked for quiet in the library. The security guard attacked me. He tried very hard to step on and ruin my computer file, cracked my rib, chipped my tooth, stole my wallet, blacked my

eye and had me arrested. I didn’t go to jail, but I did get a site and release arrest. I was later banned from the Library.

I didn’t let that stop me from finishing the book.
First I’m innocent till proven guilty, and this
PUBLIC LIBRARY belongs to me too. You can’t ban me from my property, homeless piece of shit or not – I’m still a country man, and human being.

So I just persevered and out witted the Pima county watch dogs. Finished the book and I left town to finish my editing.

Watch this MIKEL.

It was immediately after the attack that ABEL went back to the vortex.

That day at the vortex –

LOAD UP TEXAS.

NASHVILLE - ARE WE READY?

DENVER can I get an amen?

What are you doing ABEL? I’m sorta busy at the moment.

I know brother, but this time we are moving to Apocalypse 2AAB. It’s in the rules.

Apocalypse 2AAB?

Yes, Apocalypse 2AAB.

Oh. OK. Carry on little brother.

Army of Darkness, AH- TEN –TION. We are moving into new territory. We are now in Apocalypse 2AAB. You will follow your training. You will follow your training to the T, one step out of line and it's the DAMNED for you, understand me? GOOD. Remember to follow your training.

PESTY, PESTO, D-MAN, and FAM – I need you back on the board. We have lots to discuss.

Why are we doing this General, I thought you and your brother had reconciled?

We have, PESTY. This is Apocalypse 2AAB. I need you four back on the board. I intend to win this thing. They attacked me again. These creatures never intend to show MIKEL any respect. Cracked his ribs, blacked his eye, chipped his tooth, stole his wallet and I'm sick of this shit.

And we have just switched the pitch up – if they hated me before, during the Apocalypse – they're really going to hate me now that we are in –

Apocalypse 2AAB.

2AAB?

2AAB, Pesty. Meet me at the camp.

Copy that, General.

_____ Pt.5

Back at MIKEL'S campsite – under the Tuscon stars.

OK, now that all of you are here, let me explain things. I'm going to need to get those other humans that only I know

where they are at – I’m fed up with this. I’m tired of what they do to MIKEL and the other humans. I want to see all these little shits kick rocks. I’m tired of these stinking “homeless” creatures being here.

I can’t stand it anymore.

I can’t stand homeless “people”.

I hate homeless “people”.

I hate “their kind” I can’t stand “their kind”. “Their kind” piss me off. With their pompous better than thou, rich spoiled attitude. Nothing is good enough for “their kind”.

I said no pickles – I said take ‘em off yourself.

They’re lazy. They’re ugly. I can’t stand the way they smell. I think they smell funny. They smell funny to me. They all need to get a job, is what they need to do. Contribute “to society”.

I hate “their kind” with “their kinds” big houses, and “their kinds” big fake bank accounts, pay for nothing get everything for free credit cards, like I can’t tell their stealing. I hate “their kinds” fancy clothes and “their kinds” fancy cars, and the weird food they eat – caviar? That’s not caviar that’s – FISH BAIT!!! That’s what that is. That ain’t food. That’s fish bait!!! Fish eat fish bait. Best fish bait there is. You don’t eat fish bait. Fish eat fish bait. That’s a waste of good fish bait. They’re all crazy, these fn homeless species of shit, eating fish bait like that.

I hate homeless people. Wish they'd get out of here, so Imma "help them out". Once and for all.

Homeless "people" are strange. Stranger than humans, that is. And they need to get back to where they once belonged – dead planet or not.

I can't stand their better than thou attitude, rich pompous scum that pretend to be all high and mighty. Stealing all of our precious resources. Making medicine that kills humans. That's not supposed to be allowed, its thou shalt not kill. That's a command. Vaccination? MY ASS!! They're euthanizing humans. If God wanted that poison in the human body – it'd be in there at birth.

The humans don't need vaccinations. Homeless scum bags force the humans to put that poison in their body's, and

created the poison to be vaccinated from.

People get permanently messed up from that stuff as children, have to live their entire lives different. And these homeless “people” just laugh it off, “population control” is what they call it. I call it war, F them. Best predator is one that can hide well. Well they ain’t hiding from me.

I can’t stand these homeless “people” anymore. They’re ruining this place. Genetically modified food!!! Homeless scumbags came up with that crap. These homeless people claim that human people in poor country’s like Africa – which isn’t poor in natural resources at tall, those humans need vitamin a and rat poison in their rice cause they’re dying – bull shit – they are dying cause all you let them eat is rice. Damn these homeless “people” are sooo stupid

thinking WE ARE THAT STUPID. Nothing wrong with GOD'S FOOD, never has been never will be. LESH you forget.

Used to be so nice around here before all these homeless "people" showed up. I regret blowing up their planet. It was never supposed to be that bad.

Oh, great, Now he regrets it –

Oh hush, PESTY. Leave me alone. That's an order. As you were. That was only supposed to be ONE BOMB. I didn't hit the button seven times, those dip shits did it.

I'm going to go get the other humans that I know of, come back and KICK THESE **E**.LI**T**.E HOMELESS MFRS OUT OF HERE, once and for all. So I'm gonna be gone for a minute, and I need to put

together a crew that can get me there and back with MIKEL intact – not ready to give him up yet. Sorry MIKEL.

I’m used to it by now, ABEL.

I want to go, General.

OOOHHHH NNNNOOOO, PESTY, you can’t go. I’m sorry that came out wrong. PESTY, you’re my second in command. And I need someone here that can run this Apocalypse the same way I would if I were here. I am honored that you would want to go, PESTY, I am. But I need you here. You’re the only one fit for the job, PESTY.

You believe in me that much?

Yes I do, PESTY. That’s my girl. I always tell you – ALWAYS QUESTION AUTHORIY, ESPECIALLY YOUR OWN. Don’t I?

Yes.

And you do a very good job at that, PESTY.
But this time, you’re gonna be in charge of this Apocalypse if and when I go. So, it’s all your show, PESTY.

FAM– I want you to go with me. Ever the quiet one, he just smiled and shook his head.

D-MAN, you work well with PESTY, so I want you here with her.

And Pesto you know the deal, I can’t do this to you – too dangerous to ask – so you will stay with your mother.

We all clear on this?

ABEL received an affirmative response from the entire gang.

All right, dismissed you barnacles of “JUST - US”. Get to work.

Pt.6

At the Ronstadt bus terminal – Tucson Arizona.

We gotta do it again, MIKE. This time we racing for all the men in the Universe. You got the tools you need. You ready? This one gonna be tough MIKE. Come on.

MAYHAM.

Don’t MAYHAM me MIKE, this is really important, you’ll get it when you see’s it. Promise.

And the vortex began to open. I was sitting at the Ronstadt bus terminal. I was fed up with all of this “sacrificial lamb” and vortex races and foiling global alien domination plans. I began to think that it was my medicine bag, so I took it off and threw it away.

I don’t want to tell you what to do MIKE, but how you gonna shut the vortex NOW that the medicine bag is gone?

Shit.

The vortex began to open and I didn’t want to run off screaming and scare the people there at the bus terminal. I wanted to scream and run, but I couldn’t for the sake of the other people. So I got up and quietly walked away.

By the time I reached the tunnels that take traffic to 4th (Horseman) Avenue the vortex swallowed me. The next thing I knew I was being thrown into a shallow grave and dirt was being dumped on top of me.

I dug my way out.

When I got to the surface, I could see my daughter Shaolin and her mother on the other side.

Dad, is that you?

Shaolin?

Dad what’s going on?

I’m not real sure, Shaolin.

And then the ground started to rumble. The BANKS had set off another weapon of mass destruction. And suddenly I could see the objective clearly. There was a pole on my side, and a pole on Shaolin’s side. We had to reach and touch the poles, together.

Shaolin, go grab that pole. Run. Hurry. This is important.

Dad…..

Just do it. Do it quickly Shaolin. Go.

And I ran to go touch my pole. We could both feel the ground start to collapse beneath our feet as the weapon’s power engulfed us.

Grab the pole Shaolin, and hang on. Hang on tight.

Dad, I’m scared.

ME TOO, KID. Just hold onto that pole. Don’t let go till I tell you.

We held onto our poles for a while, until the tremble within the Earth beneath us stopped.

Is it over dad?

I guess it is.

Dad, I’m scared.

Come here and I will give you a hug.

What is going on?

It’s a test, Shaolin. A test of some sort. I don’t know exactly what’s going on but we did good it’s over –

Is this real, Dad, I can see you.

We are in spirit Shaolin. Does it look real?

Yeah.

Then I guess that it is real.

And then it started again.

Oh man. They did it again!!! Those cheaters. Shaolin quickly, run back and touch that pole again. Those cheaters did it again – we gotta hurry Shaolin.

Both of us had traveled across the small field. We were much futhur from the poles than the first time. The BANKS had us in a bind. We were both running furthur and faster than before – but there was hardly any time.

I got to my pole easily, but my sweet daughter was having trouble getting to hers. She had to run up hill, and didn't move as quickly as I could.

Hurry Shaolin. Hurry. –

She was almost there when I started screaming -

OH NO!!!!!!!!! It hurts. It hurts bad, it really burns, Shaolin hurry. Hurry up. I don't – know – how long - ……I'm dying. I'm dying. AAAAHHHHHH --……

Mom, is he…… dead? Did Dad just die?

I waited a few more moments till I had them truly convinced that I had just died. Then when the tears started to fall, I said -

I’m just playing. I’m just playing. I’m just playing. I’m sorry, I had to do it. I haven’t seen you in so long. Come here and give me a hug again – this might not last much longer.

DAD!! You’re such a dork. I hate you.

Sorry, little girl – oh, I love you, give me a hug.

DAD, you suck teasing me like that – Dad is this really real. I mean really really real? This is weird, Dad.

Shaolin, does it feel real when I hug

you ? And does it look real when we look

at each other? Yeah.

Well, I guess it’s real then. I know my love for you is real. Shaolin, I’ve been going through worse than this lately. This was fun. I got to see my little girl! I’m so excited. I got to see my little girl. This is so cool. I love you little one.

Dad, how long will this last?

Probably not much longer, Shaolin, listen if I don’t see you soon, just know that I love you.

- YOU MIGHT’VE WON THIS ROUND **MAYHAM**, BUT WE WILL DEFEAT YOU. WE WILL DEFEAT YOU.

Bye Shaolin.

Bye Dad.

BANKS hate me now. You did good MIKE. You just saved all Manhood across the Universe. When the women saw how you played with
your little girl – their little hearts melted, their feelings for men changed among the bitches and witches. Let me explain it to you like this – where they come from, things like BANKS, INSTITUTION, and MANAGEMENT; along with the witches and bitches – men are warriors. That’s their only purpose next to mating. Men aren’t allowed to be part of the family – they are just warriors and mates.

Here men are allowed to be part of the family. You men here play with your kids. There men are taken and trained in war from birth. Here a kid gets to be a kid. What you just did was start and save all men in the family unit - all across the galaxies, MIKE. Men can share family's now, cause of what you just did.

I knew when they saw you play with Shaolin, the vote was in the bag. Even the Spider women want to have a man like you in their family now. You just saved – or started, rather – the family unit, for men, all men - GALACTICALLY SPEAKING.

What you just did was real important MIKE. Real important. We humanized 'em MIKE, by showing them the love you human men have for your children.

Where they’re from men aren’t allowed to be with their kids. Men are just for mating and fighting. “Love” doesn’t exist anywhere but here, MIKE. We had to show the witches and bitches, that men here “love” their children. That your kind even play with your children. And that “love” between a father and child is important to both of you, caspice, MIKE?

MIKE, humans were the last creation of God. Everything else is either animal, fish, amphibian, plant, insect – or something else altogether. “Love” is an alien concept to a spider woman. But those two melted when they saw you act like you were dying to play with Shaolin. And they saw how much she loves you – crying about your little act, and laughing when she saw you were playing – you melted the spider twins, MIKE. They want a man in their family now that will help with the kids. The entire hive. Spider Women eat their mates MIKE. Or used to.

Wasn’t it good to see your daughter, even if it was just in the spirit?

Of course it was, MAYHAM. Of course it was. I love her. I miss her. Don’t know if I will ever see her again, physically.

I know. I know. Trust me, I know. Proud of you,
MIKE. I knew you could do it. You one smart cookie, MIKE. Let’s go smoke this joint I just found behind your ear MIKE.

MAYHAM……

What’s that MIKE?

I wish you’d show me this trick for when you’re not around.

I can’t tell you everything MIKE, Demz duh rulez, and we gotta follow the rules; that’s in the rules. Come on MIKE.

Chapter 12

Welcome to the Jungle

Pt.1

That evening, at the parking lot of the NOrth Side Church, in Tucson Arizona.

Sorry to bring you back so soon CAIN, but MIKEL need’s to get out of town. The BANKS and MANAGEMENT know exactly what he
looks like, and their pissed off and attacking him again.

After being attacked at the library – I want to get MIKEL to safety. He’s got to split Tucson. He isn’t safe here, they know exactly what he look’s like – which mean they know what I look like, and I told you before – your goons attack him all the time now. Whether he deserves it or not. They’ll attack him for nothing nowadays.

I’m hoping the BANKS offer another bribe. We’ll accept it this time.

Understood, little brother. I’m curious myself after what I have seen what my BANKS, Institutions have the humans praying to – a dead white Jesus Christ. I do not like that, seeing me dead on a cross. Making old mistakes better, like you said.

CAIN, do you remember the PESTY trials?

When we were young and unsure if that “compassion” - thing - was truly added to her?

DO I REMEMBER? The PESTY trial lasted 600 years and 35 PESTY lifetimes to complete. Yeah I remember. Boy’s being boys….

- And out of nowhere I burst into a strangers laugh that was unlike my own,
  ABEL’S, or CAIN’s

Quetzalcoatl! Can you believe this? What are you doing here? Already got you to laugh. See Quazzi it’s an emotion, it can be uncontrollable.
Good to see you can still remember the good
‘ol day’s. When were you going to say hello, LORD EVIL?

So that was “laughing”. What is that in front of me? Up in the sky?

Good to have you with us, brother of a different mother. That is a SUNSET – you made all those colors, LORD Dr. EVIL. That’s your work. What do you think about that, this is the very first time to see the color’s you created with a set of human eyes? What do you think? What do you think about these human’s eyes? Ain’t they the shit? Look at all the colors their eyes can possess at one time.

And the LORD of EVIL stood up and walked towards the sun. Stood there starring with pride – he purred as he starred at the Tucson Sunset. We were at the North Side Church parking lot. The same parking lot where I got hit in the head with a rock. The same rock that started the first Apocalypse.

It’s beautiful. It’s amazing. I did that?

Yes you did, Quazzi. You never got to see the colors before because your eyes are different. But all those colors you created for the humans to enjoy. They heal. You’ve been gone a long time, EVIL – ABEL said – there is so much I want to show you. Since you have your hand in this place I guess big brother thought it’s only be fair to invite you into our decision making process

How are ya’ll doing this to me? I asked.

Well, MIKEL, after CAIN’s last visit here when he almost squished you on accident, we decided that this time CAIN would possess me, and I guess QUAZZI is possessing CAIN. – ABEL informed me.

Technically, QUETZALCOATL was CAIN'S older brother from another mother. A long time ago in history CAIN banished QUETZALCOATL because of treason. The tale is told in the Bible. It takes place during the birth of the Messiah. The three wise men were sent to kill the messiah, but upon first glance they could not, and returned to the king that ordered the killing and lied to the king. That King was under CAIN command when CAIN was using a different name. Just as he did when he was THOR.

Quetzalcoatl was banished from the galaxy for this very reason. They are responsible for helping establish much of the societies that criss- cross our planet. Quetzalcoatl is also referred to as - "Timmy and the workers".

Timothy, in the Bible, is the most worker friendly chapters of the Bible. It was Timmy that built the roads of ROME,

Central EUROPE, and EGYPT. And also different parts of AFRICA. Early man learned the craft of construction through the teachings of TIMMY and the WORKERS. He also taught science, education, and among other things discipline and war.

ABEL, during the diplomatic negotiations to lift the shame, had reached out to QUAZZI. Challenged him about trying the human experience – just once; but never thought he'd actually try it. Now here he was.

I never thought you'd do this, LORD EVIL, I was only joking. But here you are – you're human, there's so much to show you.

It was the KING'S request, little General, it was CAINS idea.

There you go with the little General thing again; it’s ok - I can take it, I can take it. What do you think about that sun set, ain’t it a bute?

Stunning – ABEL, we are in APOCALYPSE - 2AAB, am I correct? TWO ALPHA DOG’S, ABEL’S BROTHER’S.

As long as I’m the Alpha dog, I guess that is true. CAIN and I are in bilateral decisions at the moment. I say WELCOME ABOARD, EVIL. I never thought you’d actually come to Earth and be a human. CAIN tell you about his first time working?

Yes, he did. No-one hits the KING. Looks like someone deserves to learn some manners.

Now, EVIL, I’m not justifying what happened, but we do live in a

Democracy. There are no kings here. So technically it's not exactly the douche bags fault that he "HIT" the KING of King's. Also, EVIL, add to that, CAIN was only possessing MIKEL. So to the guy that hit CAIN, he only looks like MIKEL. And MIKEL is just a homeless person to NICK the said douche bag; NICK treats every homeless person like that. NICK once had a homeless guy work three weeks for him, and NICK brought the guy a dirty old mattress and laid the dirty old mattress next to the **dumpster** "trying to be nice" to the homeless person. He had him sleep there next to the dumpster for three weeks and cheated Gilbert out of 50% of his pay when the job was done. DICK'S a jerk.

This guy is famous for being a jerk around here. That homeless person is named Gilbert. He is 75 years old. Uses a walker, and has to have a catheter to urinate because he can't walk the mile to the bathroom. NICK has toilets. NICK

has bathroom. What NICK doesn’t have is morals.

I mean he runs a hotel; THE GAVEL LODGE. He had a bed the guy could’ve slept in. But that’s how people treat each other here nowadays. It’s not like home, EVIL. And they did not see a KING of Kings; DICK saw a homeless man he was going to take advantage of.

That only mean I won’t kill the man.

Good. Good. I will accept that LORD Dr. EVIL, cause in order for you to kill him, once again you’d have to use MIKEL, and I don’t want MIKEL going down for murder. They’d lock him up and possibly kill him over something like that – so, good. Won’t kill the guy, I will accept that.

No-one pays attention to being nice anymore Dr. EVIL. The management has got this place entirely too messed up for people to be nice to each other anymore. The humans are constantly going in circles. If you're here that could only mean one thing – big brother needed another opinion.

Dr. EVIL, you haven't seen this place in a very long time – sorry, no pun intended. You missed the car show. CAIN loved the car show. You'll see plenty of cars while you're here; they're all over the place now days. Quazzi, let's go back to MIKEL'S campsite and take a look at the stars. He's got the best spot for looking at the sky.

MIKEL, let me introduce you to the seven headed monster of Revelations properly – as CAIN is also Jesus Christ – which makes big brother the KING of KINGS, Quazzi is the LORD of EVIL, and he is

also KING of the JUNGLE'S – all jungle's, MIKEL. Quazzi is KING of the Animal Kingdom.

Quetzalcoatl is the LORD OF EVIL – all evil.
There are several types – of evil. Necessary Evil, Un- necessary Evil, Warranted Evil, Un- warranted Evil, Pure evil, Refined Evil, and Absolute Evil are the seven types of Evil in the Universe. Quetzalcoatl is LORD over all of them, and is now along for the ride.

In the first days of Quetzalcoatl visit birds from as far as Phoenix and Guatemala came to set eyes on their savior – LORD Dr. EVIL, Quetzalcoatl.

The red tail hawk that is the Animal Queen over this planet, the same red tail hawk that ABEL had convinced to vote for her very first time during the lifting of

the shame, sat in a tree right next to me every day and night while the KING OF THE JUNGLE'S was at my camp.

One night, a large pack of Arizona Javelina's came to my camp site. Javelina's travel in a pack of between four and six usually. On this night they were countless in number. I estimated at least thirty. I could hear them all around me as I sat in my tent.

I un-zipped the door of my tent in order for Quazzi to show his presence to the javelina's.
The bull of the Javelina tribe submitted to Quazzi eight times, and the princess daughter of the bull was so excited to see the KING OF THE JUNGLE she literally almost came up to me and kissed me. It was a little too close for comfort.

Crickets by the hundred’s surrounded my camp for a week and sung us to sleep, as
Quetzalcoatl is their creator GOD. Their savior. One day while at a bus stop crossing town by the Arizona State University, I caught sight of a horned owl and a bald eagle in a tree, a very rare sight to see in Tucson in the day time.

LORD Dr. EVIL, is also as divine as CAIN, so knowing this, and that Quetzalcoatl was a eight headed dragon, lion, bear, eagle, spirit of the animal kingdom; I went to the store and bought me some more valerian root. Getting CAIN to sleep was very challenging; this was going to be eight times harder.

Pt.2

That next morning me and the spirits of Quetzalcoatl, CAIN, and ABEL went to

the convenient store that I wrote my first book, The Awakening, for some morning coffee. We sat there on the brick wall next to the trees. The song birds were all a flitter and chirping it up.

Hear that EVIL. They are so glad that you're here. So glad to see their savior, Lord EVIL - Quetzalcoatl. EVIL those girls are happier than a "pig in ------

(and immediately the birds stopped chirping to hear what ABEL would say next) –

-----I'm just playing. I'm just playing. I just wanted to see what you bird brains would do, geez. I know you're not pigs. Lighten up.

- Oh he's so funny – I didn't like him last week, but he's ok now – Quetzalcoatl's here. We're saved.

I could hear everything these little song birds were saying. They were very happy.

See, Dr. EVIL, they’re happy you’re here. Damn, Quazzi, I never thought you'd do it. I never thought you'd take me serious. Become human with us. LORD Dr. EVIL, what gives? Thanks for the silent vote, by the way. Told you it would make the difference...we got to lift the shame and MIKEL ascended.

CAIN brought me down. Said I needed to check this out. Help him with something...

oh, OH, ……OOOHHH, well what do you think - like the laughing?

Yes I do.

What about the coffee? Cause let me tell you, you will be drinking this every morning.

Not as good as I designed, but it’s comforting.
Exactly! Humans need the heat from the coffee to get their body’s going. The management makes it hard for them to get a cup of coffee, if they’re poor. And trust me all the humans are poor.

That’s why MIKEL had to hustle this store for the coffee. He does it almost every day. But I don’t feel sorry for them; I don’t. MIKEL gave them a dedication in the book, and even bought everyone at the store books that was there while he was writing the book. MIKEL, paid full price for his books too. He didn’t get a discount or royalty for those books’ he bought the employee’s.

And get this, no-one ever said thanks. One girl, CAT, did. Instead, the convenient store shuts down the electrical outlet he used to write the book, and now no-one could ever charge their phone there ever again.

They moved the coffee MIKEL gets off his food stamps to the other side of the store. Making it harder for MIKEL to get on his morning coffee or even impossible since he pays for the coffee on food stamps – which is a no no. No hot food allowed for the poor, that would ruin the nation.

God forbid the poor would need or want HOT
FOOD.

That dedication is free advertising. They just saved thousand’s in advertising, and what thanks does MIKEL get? They make his life harder and don’t say one lousy “thank you”.

What about the smoking? You like the smoking?

Not as bad as I thought it would be.

About that, Dr. EVIL, - MIKEL, smokes - but EVIL, MIKEL can’t smoke - eight cigarettes - each time he smokes with you, plus his own- feel me? You seven dorks will have to be modest when you smoke - enjoy the smoking, but enjoy the smoking in moderation. Your killing him, pun intended, with all the extra smoking. MIKEL smokes – but not smoke after smoke after smoke. Just ease up on the killing my MIKEL so quickly is all I’m saying. I like this guy.

You can't kill my human prison over your new discovery of smoking O.K.? Not yet, not like this.

Listen, LORD EVIL QUAZZI - that brings me to another problem. Now look, I am not jumping down your throat, or even telling you what to do, you're a LORD and I don't want you to think I haven't any respect for you. If your gonna do

that, reflect on some other past issue, O.K.? I'm just looking out for MIKEL, when I say this to you. O.K.

MIKEL got his rib cracked when that security guard beat him up for asking for quiet at the library. We all know they were trying to jack and steal his work files, but he still has a cracked rib - so when you are enjoying this new laughing thing, remember if we should accidentally laugh too hard, or keep laughing as much as we have been, EVIL, we can turn that “crack” into a “fracture”, and that fracture - that could and will puncture the lung. Then, we could be having an actual APOCALYPSE, on accident. Understand?
If MIKEL dies, even accidentally, it’s the APOCALYPSE. Quazzi, I had to tell the same thing to CAIN. He himself was scarfing down some BEN and JERRY'S ice cream, loving it, but the ice cream had these big chocolate candies in it. And one got stuck in MIKEL'S throat, and

MIKEL started to choke. It was bad. Real bad. Close call type bad.

He had to give himself the Heimlich maneuver all alone at the park, no one to help. He was banging himself against the park bench. And luckily, it dislodged, and he was all right. But it was close. And well these little guys are fragile. I like MIKEL, I can’t let this one go – unless…..we have to……. possibly.

These little guys are fragile, and considering that MIKEL is the only one that could start an APOCALYPSE, even on accident, we should be aware of his body a bit more than we are used to. Understand me QUAZZI? You have never died a human death before, or been human before. Just use caution QUAZZI, that's all I ask, O.K.?

Sire. ABEL, you have grown up.

Thanks’ I guess.

I have never seen you care for anyone but yourself and Akosha or Asoka. This is impressive.

Pt.3

Come on MIKEL, let’s go and visit NICK. You did work for him, am I correct?

Yes you are EVIL. We can’t kill him Quazzi.

I never said I would kill him. I do much more than killing MIKEL. No one treats the KING like trash. He hit the KING. You do not hit the KING. He is your creator. No matter what God you pray to, he is

also their creator. You don’t hit my brother.

So we grabbed a bag of trash from a dumpster, and walked it over to the Gavel Lodge and poured it out.

$5.00 to pick up a **ton** of trash. NICK can pick this up himself for free. It’s 2 a.m. he won’t find it till morning

Hey you. You come here. You come here now.

(*&^%$#@!)

Unintelligible tongue from QUAZZI -

Oh you saw that. Its 2 a.m. NICK. You look wide awake. I will definitely come there, if you really want me to – we

need to talk. Need some coffee? And I threw my liter of coffee in his face. Nothing.

Quazzi –

We need to talk, NICK.

BBBBAAAAMMMMM **– oops upside your head, said oops upside your head.**

And the fight commenced. DR. EVIL couldn't understand why DICK wasn't vaporizing upon his contact.

Why won't he vaporize?

They're physical Quazzi. They don't vaporize by the touch of the master's hand.

Quetzalcoatl reached up behind Nick's neck and touched Nick in three very peculiar places, three very peculiar ways.

What is this thing? He's supposed to be paralyzed.

Quazzi hit Nick in the balls. Nothing. He hit NICK in the balls again and again and again. Nothing.

I know the things work, I put them there.

EVIL grabbed NICK by the balls twisted, yanked and yanked – IF YOUR BALLS don't start acting like BALLS your throat is next. EVIL yelled.

Let MIKEL do this, EVIL, you dragged him into this. NICK started to get the upper hand and the balls weren't acting like

balls – so I blinded him. Stuck my finger in his eyes, and then gave him three hot and spicy when he couldn't see them coming. Ripped his stupid shirt to remind him, don't pay me – buy another shirt then. $5.00? to work for you all day? Ou just bought you a fight NICK. Learn some respect, NICK.

You wait right here, you stay right there. I'm calling police – Sadhiah – Sadhiah call police, call police now. Sadhiah I need you. I need you to call the police. There's trash out here.

Damn, feel sorry for his wife sometimes.

Just like a fake man, get your wife to do your dirty work. I will wait right here for the police, NICK. Go ahead and call them bitch.

You will?

Of course I will , DICK, why would I lie to you? Let’s go. What AN ASS hole.

_____ We

have visitors.

What?

MIKEL, I should’ve been able to paralyze him when I touched him. I hit the balls of that thing seven times. I yanked and twisted – why didn’t his balls act like your balls.

Admit it, if I did that to you, you’d have been on the ground, reeling in pain. Why didn’t he flinch? He didn’t even feel pain. He was just looked shocked – not because of his balls, but because you were attacking him and standing up for

yourself. That’s an alien. He’s not from Earth.

MIKEL, I created all people of color. All Languages. All cultures. All types of music.
Math. Science. Reading. I had help, yes I did. But I designed every nationality. Every language. Every human has a button, MIKEL, and if I touch it – they die, or get paralyzed. I’m a LORD - MIKEL. The undisputed LORD OF EVIL. Discipline is my task, and I’m damned good at it. Legendary, even. He should’ve heard my command and followed it. That is not a human. Not a human I created. He’s an alien.

We have visitors. This is not good. What the hell has happened to this place? Who are they, and why are they here?

Pt.4 The

next morning – at the

vortex.

We want your full surrender.

Oh, do you? Believe me when I say this to you, I think it’s adorable that you think you are so big, strong, and powerful.

That’s where it comes from –

He’s pointing at me, isn’t he?

(look’s at MAYHAM, points at visitors, looks away, points at ABEL)

I’m used to it. Where were we – oh yes, fool surrender. Ok, whatever you are, I understand you want a surrender.

You want my full surrender? Alright fool, I surrender. But while I remove all that I care about, as it is customary in war and surrenders, let me inform you about your future troubles as you enjoy my full surrender, fool.

There is a mother ship that is 1 million times bigger than this entire Universe. And it is on its way here. NOW. If that mother ship does not see you, you and this entire Universe will be crushed like a bug on a car’s windshield.

And when I get safely there on the ship, I will turn right back around, come back, and destroy this planet atom by atom – one atom at a time. Just to let off a little stress I'm having trying to save this place, and have some fun too. Caspice?

I am not called General DEATH, defender of the galaxies, because I am a nice guy that runs from anything as – dare I say UGLY and TINY and devilishly cute as yourself.

Now let me ask you a question? I have 18 infinity in my ARMY. How many are in yours? That's what I thought

Can you stop the inevitable doom that's coming this way, the way I can, since it **is** my family that is on its way here – or would you like my help?

I can tell by your lack of answer, you mean “yes.” Am I correct?

That’s what I thought. Now tell me about yourself. Who are you? And why are you here? Are you a refugee? Do you need our help? Are you running from something? Like responsibility? Justice? What’s wrong with your planet? Did you destroy it? Were you run off, or did you run off? I need to know everything.

If you are running from something I need to know what it is and why it is chasing you. How big is it? Does it hunt you? Why does it hunt you? Did you do something wrong and your hiding here to escape justice? Or are you prey, because the way you act – I can tell – you are not prey, you’re a predator. Why are you on – **- MY PLANET?**

Answer me fool.

NOW, or I will not assist you and just give you my surrender fool. I’m sorry, my full surrender.

I don’t think they heard you, BOSS.

MAYHAM.

It’s the look of fear. I don’t think they heard you. I think there still figuring out how small they are. Takes time ‘ya know, to let all that info sink into their about to be destroyed microscopic bird brains, got to give them credit, they must be related to you ABEL. They’re as cocky as you are.

All right, MAYHAM, that’s enough.

We will retreat. .

Since you’re the microscopic peon that truly needs a really big friend like me on your side –
I’M GONNA TALK AND YOUR GONNA LISTEN.

Where ever you think you are going to go, let me make this clear to you – that place will be destroyed. The mother ship only cares about this Universe, and this planet. Where ever you think you are going is not going to be safe to you for very long. If you want to survive, you will tell me everything I need to know.

You obviously don’t understand hyperspace dimensional travel. Let me explain it to you as easily as I can. Reality is like an onion. It exists in layers. As the ship approaches reality’s lay on top of each other. Closer than ever before. Tears along the walls of this reality we are in can occur, which is

most likely how you got here. I need to know about these tears so I can have them fixed. Quickly.

Hyperspace dimensional travel is like water going down a drain, accept space doesn’t spiral – it is stretched. They are not traveling ALL THE WAY HERE. Instead, they are traveling half of the way, and pulling this universe the other half of the way, and we will meet OR collide in the middle of the distance that was once between us.

As they pull us, which you can feel the pull beneath your feet from time to time - that is not your imagination, that is them locking onto us – or trying, rather. As they get closer, reality’s we do not want with us can enter through rips that occur. If there are too many rips, or if a rip does not get mended in time, this universe will disintegrate.

And our efforts to save the reality you so care takeover, will dissolve into nothing. I don’t know where you come from, but that place albeit a planet galaxy or another Universe, that place is slightly less important than this place. It will be destroyed and we will fix it later. We promise. That’s the deal we have made with the Galactic Council, but you obviously aren’t a part of that council, so tell me – who are you? And where do you come from? Who is your creator? And who is his King? And why haven’t any of us ever met before now.

Full surrender? You need my help, and I don’t want to surrender. I want you to leave me alone. I am in the middle of a rescue operation, and stopping this rescue operation to deal with the likes of youis only stopping our progress and is also irritating me as well. I don’t think that you want to piss me off, but I could be wrong.

I will give you some time to think things over, till then feel free to leave me alone as I try to save your tiny pathetic ass from extinction. That is all. Leave me.

Best surrender yet, BOSS. Best surrender yet.
You think they bought it?

MAYHAM, they'll be lucky if I let them make it.

Roger that BOSS. Want me to follow 'em.
Never mind.

Pt. 5

Since you're here for at least 3 days, Dr. Evil, let's go to the library and take a look at things. Let me show you the place. See how we can fix this place .....possibly.

Remember the rabbit?

Don't you mean the hare? And yes I remember the bunny, with its pointy bitey fangs. What's up doc's?

Did you have to bring it up? I miss my bunny.

Oh MAYHAM, all good things must come to an end. We couldn't keep the bunny and you know it – with its pointy bitey fangs. It wasn't safe to keep here any longer. It evolved.

Oh poor LUNA. She’s forgiven me by the way, but CAIN had more to do with that – CAIN’S no longer a virgin, and LUNA is pregnant. She loves MIKEL. Happened during the invasion we stopped against Ramses. CAIN snuck off, and lets just say LUNA loves MIKEL. I mean really loves MIKEL. She’ll take him in if we can’t find a home for him later. I’m pretty sure of it.

The good old days. When I was the general.

Were the General, that’s correct. MIKEL, Quetzalcoatl used to be the General to the
Army of Darkness. He lost his rank during the Pesty trials. It was a bet. Man, talk about an ass hole of a leader. Quazzi is the king of ass holes. There is no better ass hole than Quazzi himself.

----ABEL, I want to go fishing today, and as you are my second in command, my little #2, you will have to maintain control over all of my forces. I use THIS button to talk to my forces.

See if you can use my button?

Button? But this buttons not hooked up to anything?

Are you not “CAP-ABLE” to push a simple button – my little #2?

Do you not possess the “special ability” to push a simple single button? How will you talk to my forces? My little #2?

Are you not “ABLE” to use a button, little #2? How will I ever go fishing?

It’s not hooked up to anything –

Let me see that thing – (pushes

button)

Attention!

Works for me.

Try it again.

Give me that – Attention!

Little #2, if you’re not able and cannot push the button correctly, how will I ever go fishing?

But it’s not hooked up to anything.

That’s because –

YOU’RE **NOT** THE - **GENERAL.**

Give me that thing.

I’m building soldiers here, my little #2, not Generals. Little ABEL - TOTH – I guess you have a lot to learn about pushing buttons. Can you fish, little ABEL? Well then, you will have to learn how to fish, because I want to eat some PHISH tonight, my little #2. Hurry along now, my little #2, while I build me some more soldiers.

(Push and hold button)

Go and catch me some fish, since you are not “ABLE” to push MY button, my little #2.
THAT’S AN ORDER - You are Dismissed.

———————————————

Pt.6

That night at the vortex –

We were wondering when are we going to get to make our customary three moves in our new Apocalypse, General Toth.

That’s ABEL TOTH jr. To you BANKS –

BANKS –

Do you know what the money sign stands for, beside money? Let’s say you don’t – and I will just tell you. It’ll be more fun that way.

There was once a man named SAMSON. He was the strongest man in all of the known world. He had been concurred. Captured. And SAMSON was tied to two pillars, and about to be slaughtered. His enemies were the BANKS, Institutions, and Religious leaders of the time known as the governance. They were the right, and SAMSON was the wrong.

SAMSON was, like I said, tied to TWO pillars. That’s where the two bars that used to go through the money sign come from, because now it only has ONE pillar and looks like this $. Whereas the symbol used to have. Caspice?

Now SAMSON, like I said before, felt defeated, and he was – sorta. Because, as legend has it – a SNAKE, slithered down one of the two pillars, and whispered sweet nothings into the ear of SAMSON.

SAMSON – you’re not defeated. Look at these intelligent fools. All lined up and ready to be killed. In just one shot. All you have to do is – do it. Believe in yourself. You can kill them all right now. Just believe in yourself.

But I’m about to die.

No, SAMSON, your dead – I’ve already bitten you – no-one dead can die – when you accept that you are already dead, you will gain strength over LIFE itself - now do it, do what you have to do, and kill these sons of bitches.

The “S” in the $ symbol stands for the snake that bit SAMSON, and SAMSON himself. A man brought down, who in his final moments, BROUGHT DOWN THE
. .banks.

OF THE “BAN-KING”

SYST- THEM

I wonder how many bankers know this fact about - there -“own MONEY”?

BANKS MONEY is a reflection of sunlight, am I correct? The sun goes across the land and you work ALL DAY, maybe even at night, BUT THE WORK YOU GAVE TO THE COMMUNITY is
reflected in the form of MONEY. now let me ask you - why is the reflection of sunlight less valuable in Mexico then it is in the united states - it’s the same sun, same eight hours, but the
Mexican sunlight HAS LESS VALUE - SO DO THE WORK SHOPS

What about the sunlight in Japan? Why is their sunlight less value, BANKS, than say the sunlight near a - WHITE BANK “SYST- THEM”? It’s not.

We will have a **new world order** by “choice or by force” - isn't that what YOU

SAY, let me guess, THEY SAID ET, DIDNT THEY? guess
what - you are correct - we force (= ity) on you.

It’s obvious BANKS, you value nothing more than destruction, so we value the destruction of your value. You were buying, and going to buy, a bomb that will kill us all. In just one shot, am I correct? Because I know that I am.

Since you are the ones that don’t like US here, then I guess “you” will have to go there. You are predators here, and we will no longer be your prey. So I guess you have to go back where you are the prey. There is no other option left available.

BANKS, the rules of engagement have changed for Apocalypse 2AAB. It says

right here in the rules – pull out rules for Apocalypse 2AAB – says right there –

I DON’T HAVE TO FOLLOW THE RULES.

Read it and weep. Apocalypse 2AAB – rule # go fuck yourself #3 –

ABEL DOESN’T HAVE TO FOLLOW THE RULES.

But. ….

No “Butt”s about it, BANK’S, DEMZ DUH RULEZ and we have to follow the rules – that’s in the rules. Demz Duh Rulez, BANKS. And we gotta follow the rules.

That’s in the rules.

You should read the last line of the original patriot act for the – dare I say, reminder of how that rule got in there. Caspice, BANKS?

Chapter 13

The Long and Winding Road.

Pt.1

Remember the Luna mission?

MIKEL, as you well know, me and the Vamps have a history. A very shakey history. But once upon a time we needed their help. MAYHAM had devised a super-secret weapon to assist in the war against the vamps, but that weapon evolved, and we needed the assistance of vamps help to" take care of" MAYHAM'S super-secret weapon bone

thugs and armory the bunny. Or at least relocate it.

Uh, HI…. I know we don't usually get along, and we're always killing each other. But we have a "problem", and – this might sound strange coming from me, but - we need your help. The bunny has evolved. It's eating humans now. And no-one knows the bunny – better than you guys.

I know – I know – I'm embarrassed to ask too, Cull. But this is important. I mean real important.

Well you see, we were showing the humans Seinfeld, and MAYHAM and I heard all the screaming, but we quiet naturally thought they were just upset about the last episode of Seinfeld, I mean who wouldn't; it's the last episode of Seinfeld. And of course we were

drinking – again, too much, again – and we - MAYHAM and I, of course - passed out; and when we went to settle the little humans down – they were all dead. Accept two that buried themselves, I think you know what I mean?

Well, we have this idea, Cull, we thought we would form a human chain – if you could still call yourself that, from here to Luna. And then we will get the rabbit – I mean the bunny of vampire destruction; to follow you, Cull, up to Luna where we have made a very large “X”. Once you get the bunny of vampire destruction safely – I know, I know – I sound strange slaying, sorry saying it – safely on the “X”–
The General has created a new weapon called the “wont missile”. Should be great. Fool proof. He says.

You’ll be famous Cull. I will make sure your name never gets forgotten, Cull. I

promise you that. I promise you that. I did it for Orion didn't I – the last time we had this same problem? I will make you famous, just in case something terrible should happen – it's an honorable mission, Cull. You have to think of the herd.

Look, Cull, there's just too many of you. And you can't survive off only "two humans". This bunny has an appetite for destruction.

I didn't create it – MAYHAM did. YES. HE. DID. I could NEVER be that mean, my reputation aside. Why do you blame me, I like you guys…..sometimes. This has to be done, Cull. It's the best idea we got. How you gonna survive off two humans, Cull? You know it's the right thing to do – Cull. Think of the herd.

I know you’re tired of living in underground layers hiding from the bunny of vampire destruction all the time. I feel sorry for you, I do. You’re not? You have what? How did you get episodes of the Simpsons ? – oh – that’s pretty cool. Futurama too? Is that any good, I’ve heard mixed reviews.

Well it’s still the right thing to do, Cull. You have to think of the herd, Cull, you’ll never make it with just two humans. We let you “EAT” sometimes. DON’T be Silly. And now there’s nothing to eat. THINK ABOUT IT, Cull. THINK ABOUT IT. What are you gonna eat next Sam Hain’s? Think about it? Who you goona eat? We’re supposed to get the humans to descend, Cull, after an ascension…….supposedly.

But we have to think of the other two humans for now, Cull – so we got a deal, Cull?

You'll be talked about forever, Cull. I promise you that. I promise you that.

Why do you always get the credit BOSS? It was idea. It was MY BUNNY! I made the super-secret vampire slaying bunny – with its pointy bitey fangs.

I don't know MAYHAM. I don't know.

It's like they don't respect me.

MAYHAM.

It's as if you're the best, and I'm not. Stupid is what it is – I made the super-secret bunny of vampire destruction.

Now MAYHAM, I will make sure you get the credit you deserve one day – I promise you that. I promise you that.

Pt.2

Pretty odd to ask your nemesis for help, but we had to evolve the humans back then too. It’s been a long road to get us to back to where we once belonged, MIKEL.

“the vampire battalion ain’t what she used to be – ABEL gonna be proud of me, I reduced them all down to three.

The vampire battalion ain’t what she used to be, I only used my super-secret bun-ny. ABEL gonna be proud of me.

The vampire battalion ain't what it used to be – they're splattered all over me, I am sooo happy."

We had a lot of fun with our fighting back in the old days –

Now Pesto, I am building soldiers here. So listen to me. Listen to me closely. I have devised a weapon that won't miss that bunny, now that it's on the X – properly. But the "won't missle" is missing a little something. So you will have to follow my order's, Pesto. Following orders is good for my soldiers, Pesto.

Ready?

(push button) Up

(push button) Up

(push button) Up

(push button) right

(push button) right

(push button) right

(push button) dooooooown

(push button) down a little more

(push button) down justa teency weency bit more.

(push button) left, left, left.

– ahhhhhh. Perfect.

(push button) now fire – wait!

(push button) I did not say fire –

(push button) I said “fire wait”

(push button) that’s not the same as “fire”,
PESTO.

(push button) No it’s not.

(push button) NO ITS NOT.

(push button x’s 3) NO NO NO –

(push button) NO ITS NOT

(push button) don’t argue with the General,
PESTO.

(push button) It’s not polite, PESTO..

(push button and hold) That’s the only “wont missile” we have, PESTO – you’ll just have to go and get it.

(push button and hold) I don’t care how long it takes you to go and get the “wont missile” –
BUT YOU BETTER BE BACK HERE IN FIVE MINUTES.

(push button) Hurry up, PESTO, Seinfeld’s on.

Pt.3

MIKEL, Quazzi is not only the LORD of EVIL – he also happens to be the prince of Evil, King of Evil, Creator of Evil, and

the Lord of Evil and the GOD of Evil, he doesn't share a title with anyone.

Quazzi doesn't share any title with any other entity ever because of the PESTY trials. He just doesn't like to share. That's because he made that mistake once – am I correct Dr. Evil?

Oh my little #2 – did you have to bring it up.
Yes MIKEL. I used to be the General of the
Army of Darkness – and I lost my title as General – because of my little #2, ABEL-TOTH, and the PESTY trials.

You know Quazzi, we're all doing new things here. CAIN took his first steps. He also ate his first steak. You smoked tobacco for the first time. CAIN drank coffee. Why don't you do something for me, and go train PESTO. I want PESTO to

grow up to be as big, bad, strong and, dare I say – slightly less immature, why don't you go and have PESTO trained for me? I need a bad ass for this Apocalypse.

Are you sure?

I'm most definitely sure, look at him. No offense PESTO. He could be better.

What would PESTY say?

I say do it Quazzi – you're the best.

And off they went.

The PESTY trials, MIKEL, was a test for all of us. PESTY, as you well know, is- or was, or can be- a BITCH. Before she was

ever PESTY she was the Queen of the Mist.

PESTY was the first bitch ever given “compassion”. And, your “made in the image of god” – right? Well, we needed a sign. Sound familiar?

So we devised a test, that if PESTY should ever complete this test – and some of the guys – the four of us, didn’t really want her to make it; but WE don’t run our democracy – if she could ever forgive us, and still drink with us, that “compassion” thing was in there.

But we had to make extra extra extra sure –

“There are only two choices **LEFT**, chose the right one.”

What? ASP. How did they stay alive for 300 years. OH I'm GONNA kill you gggguuuuyyyzz……(thunk),

OH NOW WHY DIDN'T say "correct" – make the CORRECT choice, FAMINE? Now she may never make it – I gotta bet to win FAMINE, you're not helping.

We made this test so hard that it took 600 years to complete and 35 PESTY girls to finish the bet – I mean challenge.

Poor PESTO stayed with us the entire time, learning how to be a solider under the command of the once General Dr. Evil – Quetzalcoatl.

She's here. She's here.

Let me see those GOOGLES. PESTO, that’s the entire Persian fleet. SINK ‘EM.

But I made those ships myself.

Doesn’t matter, PESTO. I’m building soldiers here - PESTO. And your mother didn’t follow my orders. Sink those ships.

But I don’t know how to use this thing yet.

First time for everything, PESTO. I will show you this one time, and then, you do what I showed you. First you push the button, like this – OH lookie here, they personalized it for you PESTO. See there – it say’s – “Do you really want to kill your mother PESTO?” Hit yes.

Like this.

And do that over and over till all those ships are in Davey Jones locker.

But those are my favorite.

THAT’S AN ORDER PESTO.

Your mother must learn the “value” of following my order’s to the letter. I said I wanted her to come alone – bring FAMINE – and be on a wooden ship with a skull and cross bones upside down wearing a red bandana and make sure it has a red rose in its mouth – that’s the entire Persian fleet, PESTO. SINK ‘EM.

But that was my favorite one –

Oh, PESTO, there will be another PESTY after this you know this by now. Sink ‘EM – THAT’S
AN ORDER.

But I like the red headed one.

PESTO

Yes sir.

When it came to PESTY we went a little over board I will admit – PESTO is gay, but we don’t know if it’s because of all the trauma we caused him growing up killing all of those mothers, or if he was just created that way. We like to take credit for everything, so we think the trauma caused it. PESTO is like the child I never knew I wanted.

I always told PESTY – know your enemy – like thine self. So Quazzi ordered her to do an immaculate creation. Thus PESTO was created. He's a great whatever he is – I don't know how she did it, but she came back with a PESTO child. I used to call him PRESTO – but he got sick of the name, and made me change it. He didn't even like the name PESTO either, until we created Pesto. Now he likes it, won't change it. Thinks he's named after pesto, which he kind of is – or vice versa – it's been so long and we were drunk, I can't remember which came first.

PESTO is the creator of Pistachio Ice Cream – it was supposed to be spinach and chocolate, but we convinced him to do something else, kids can be soooo easy.

PESTO, spinach and chocolate ice cream? You want to create spinach and chocolate ice cream? Are you sure?

I like Popeye. I want to be just like Popeye. He gets all big and strong when he eats Spinach, but I don't like spinach – but I do like ice cream –

I see. Uh, well……PESTO, it's not the spinach that makes Popeye so big and strong – it's the color green that does that. Pistachios are also green, PESTO, why don't we try that instead of spinach – since you yourself just said you don't like spinach –

OK.

Thus PESTO is the grand master creator of Pistachio Ice Cream.

The obstacle course that PESTY had to endure was very difficult to say the least. We had a drinking "problem" back then, by that I mean we were drunk all

the time – and we devised this “test” not just to get in with the boys, but too also get “our sign”. We really needed a sign. Sound familiar?

It was ordered by the galactic council after the second Apocalypse that the Strike Team take on a woman – I mean a girl, a spirit, an immaculate creation and a dinosaur. The Galactic council thought we spirits were having just a bit too much fun and taking too long to get things fixed down here.

Apocalypse two lasted 1200 years MIKEL. WOODEN had become more powerful than his master. Big ABE was the leader of the strike team back then, and the council stripped him of his Strike Team leader status to replace him with the once General Dr. Evil – Quetzalcoatl.

Like I said – you're never going to win a war against the "creator God of war", so the Galactic Council took the Apocalypse Weapon away from Big ABE. That Apocalypse did a lot of damage – 1200 years, think about it.

To win that "battle" against WOODEN, Big ABE created all dimensions space and time. We go through five dimensions every week; we call them MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY, and FRIDAY. We also go through time every day. 24 hours of them, split into minutes and seconds and hours. And even milliseconds now. As if we really need MORE time and have nowhere to put it.

This was the creation of Apocalypse 2. Big ABE is still happy in his place as the "assisting" General of the Army of the Damned.

Dr. EVIL only had command of the Apocalypse
Strike team once, and lost his rank in the Army of Darkness – because of the PESTY trials, and our bad habit of betting on everything.

IF SHE EVER GET'S ON THE CREW. I WILL MAKE YOU THE GENRAL – Little ABEL.

DEAL. I bet she does. And that's how I became the General of the Army of Darkness, and the leader of the Apocalypse Strike team. Up until then I was just Quazzi's "little #2", Dr. Evils second in command.

Gambling is how we evolve MIKEL. Without betting – we'd still be in the water, wouldn't we? Somebody once had to say – "I bet you can't stay out there", and another guy had to say, "I bet you're wrong." Is life the challenge, or is

winning the bet a challenge - that winning at life ain’t no challenge at all, is it? I may never know, but I’m dying to find out.

Gambling is Evolution, and everything evolves. Am I correct? I know I am.

PESTY, legend has it – had to walk up mount Everest – many times actually; barefooted with a set of golf clubs – sometimes – a pink plastic flamingo another time, a coke bottle once – and FAMINE – always the quiet one, had to follow here, while whistling, carrying a pink paper umbrella.

Lift your feet up higher.

Huh?

Blank stare from FAMINE –

PESTY continues walking -

So you don’t die from frost bite this time.

HUH? Did you just say something?

Shakes head “NO.” uses fingers to imitate a person walking lifting her feet up higher.

Man, it’s like we just connected, or something, cause I swear I heard you talk. I swear I heard you say that. That is so cool. It’s like I can hear your thoughts. Wow. We’re connecting on a whole new level. I must be tapping into my greater consciousness like that one weird old guy back in Japan said I would,

before I kicked everyone's ass and killed them all for this Coke thingy.

What is this thing for anyways? The gods must be crazy to make something soo stupid. What is a Coke, anyways? Ohhhhh I know what's in this. – It's full of magic, that's so cool. Cause now I can hear your thoughts.

You don't "think" much do you FAMINE? Me neither. It just like the General and that other crazy old man said back in TIE ONE ON, just before I slaughtered that entire city of warriors using only a sugar cane pole – just after I downed that bottle of Absinth mixed with a few bottles of vodka "drinking with boys", - "DON"T THINK ABOUT IT JUST FN DO IT"

Poor guy, I feel bad about that sometimes, but then I just "Don't think about it" just like the General said not to

– I guess we DEW have something in common after all FAMINE – we don’t think too much.

You know, you might be a little weird and a little quiet, A LITTLE TOO QUIET ACTUALLY, but I like you – FAMINE.

Thanks that’s a good idea. Lift my legs higher, so I DON’T GET CRAMPS. Good idea, I’m so glad I can hear your thoughts now. Gets lonely, being all alone on this journey sometimes. Thanks FAMINE. I like you.

Wow this is so cool. Coke. Man, what the world need now is just a little more Coke – then we could all hear each other thoughts. But that might not be good because I can have some really nasty thoughts sometimes.

I get horny too, sometimes, and I wouldn’t want people to hear those thoughts. Especially PRESTO. That wouldn’t be good. But we wouldn’t have PRESTO without them thoughts. I love PRESTO. I miss him, sometimes.

You know, I’m really glad I slaughtered all those people to get this – Coke – thingy. I can hear your thoughts now. That is sooo cool.
Man this thing might be important

after all. Can’t wait to get to the top

fn this hill. points – (keep going) –

roll’s eyes.

Pt.4

Quazzi why aren’t you allowed into heaven with CAIN, if the two of you are brothers?

MIKEL, heaven is a “thou shalt not kill” kingdom. A long time ago when we didn’t have a lot of words, the way you do today; and we were communicating with the unintelligent species of the time, we had to get the people to understand what we were trying to get accomplished – a domain of absolute peace. In a “thou shalt not kill kingdom”, something that kills – the way I do, cannot be allowed into heaven.

I’m called “EVIL” because I kill to survive. But, MIKEL, is a LION – “EVIL” because a lion needs to kill in order to eat and survive? I say it’s not.

But in a time when we had very few words we had to call killing something. A lion is an animal that kills. Killing was named “evil”, so therefor; because I eat

meat and kill the meat I eat – I am considered and called “EVIL”. But only in the Kingdom of Heaven.

I care not. I love my Kingdom. Why wouldn’t I. I am Lord. And I treat my entire Kingdom as family.

Quazzi, no-one with a laugh as hearty as you could possibly be evil.

Why thank you MIKEL. I only look after my family. Or kill attackers. Or whomever I am told to kill, for whatever necessary reason a council, or jury find the subject needs to be killed. I do not kill for fun; but I do kill people that kill for fun. Does this make any since?

Does to me.

Thank you MIKEL. I'm glad you can understand. I'm not as Evil as the simple word Evil suggest. I'm just the LORD of EVIL. All EVIL. The KING of all Jungles, MIKEL.

As you can tell by the visiting birds from Guatemala and Canada, and the Javelinas and Ocelot – I am well loved. It is good to be home.

You ready to destroy the place?

This is my best work. I spent much time here MIKEL, perfecting the place. I am honored and happy to be here after being gone so long.

MIKEL, we once had a Utopia. But Utopia takes a perfect balance. A perfect balance of good and evil sharing. As you well know – society is alien to the natural

design of this planet. But a Utopia is a society. A perfect society.

We had small Utopian society's in our past– very small, made possible because the outer rim of the Utopian society was – to say the least very Evil, chaotic. Dangerous for a human, and it takes – never mind……

That's enough of the history lesson, Dr. Evil. EVIL, I got a question for you, EVIL, would you help me get home? Dad said I can't come home till "the LION eats with the LAMB" – but he didn't say what lion and what type of lamb?

ABEL, you know I –

Eeh eehh eeh now EVIL, don't be silly, you can eat meat just one time – it'd

help me get home EVIL. I’m thinking of you too, now.

He said “when the lion eats with the lamb”. That’s all he said. And CAIN is here, we can get ELISHA here, and – well….

I see where you’re going with this.

Quazzi, eating is part of the human experience, and you have to feed MIKEL. That why his stomachs feels like this all day. He hasn’t eaten in a week Quazzi. He’s been a perfect diplomat knowing that you are divine. However he is not divine, and you need to feed this little guy.

Poor little guy, I like him. –
(HASH awakens and pets my head.)

We have to feed him EVIL. And you want to know what it’s like to be human. I know the perfect place. And it’s not far from here. They serve lamb. The best lamb, EVIL. CAIN ate a steak. You can feed your human prison host body one time – it’s the way it done, Quazzi. You can’t let them go without food. They eat Quazzi. They have to eat.

I guess he should have one last –

Hey. Enough of that. Will you do

it?

But, ABEL, what will my Kingdom think of me?

That’s not the point. The point is your willing to help me get home.

Café Desta rest at the five points corner of 18th Street and Stone Avenue in Tucson Arizona. They serve the best plate of lamb. If you are ever in Tucson, while it still exists, and you want a great plate of lamb, go there. They know what they are doing when it comes to lamb.

We, CAIN, ELISHA, ABEL, QUETZALCOATL, and myself walked there and had three plates of lamb. We each shared a plate. One for each lamb, and one for each lion.

That fulfills the prophecy. Dad’s gonna be pissed off at me, but – oh well.He never said “what” lion and “what” lamb. He just set the boundaries and we fulfilled them. Now I can go home too. Once we get this planet fixed

.....possibly.

Doesn’t the body feel better Quazzi. They love their food, Quazzi. See how good it tasted? I know you enjoyed the tongues senses. And that was a really good plate of food. MIKEL just spent the last of his money Quazzi on you. You should go easy on him when the time comes. He didn’t have to do that. That’s what I am trying to show you two, brothers. These humans will give their lives to their spirit, and their spirit leaders. You two need to show a little gratitude, and think about fixing this place instead of just destroying it. We can’t duplicate an accident, brothers.

MIKEL, it is time. We have spent three days together, and I know that you are a curious being. Have you come up with a guestion for me?

Hold on. Hold on. I’m still thinking.

I got a question ABEL? If I were to say “everything and everybody” at the sacrifice; would Quazzi be able to go? I want Quazzi to stay with me. I like Quazzi.

We don’t know MIKEL, but he is part of everything.

MIKEL, you’re running out of time for your question. You have just two minutes left. Have you thought of a question?

Not yet.

ABEL, what would you do if I won this round?

I’d shit bricks. No-one has ever defeated Mr. Know it all – Quetzalcoatl. It would be a first.

You think I can’t do it? You think I can’t win. ABEL – I’m offended.

You’re wasting your time MIKEL. One minute left.

ABEL – I’m offended, I mean really offended. You think I can’t do this. I mean really think I can’t ask a question Quazzi couldn’t possibly answer. Fuck you if you think I can’t beat Quazzi at this stupid little game why am I even playing this stupid game? – What’s he win anyways if I lose?

Can’t tell you everything ,MIKEL. Demz duh rules. Hurry up MIKEL, you have 15 seconds left.

No this is fucking important ABEL, fuck you, you think I can't win. I can win this thing. I know I can. Watch me. And when I win I want an apology.

Uh, MIKEL, you got 9 seconds left to ask a question, is this the right time to discuss this?

Yes it is. ABEL – I'm offended and if I ask a question Quazzi can't answer I deserve an apology.

5 seconds MIKEL, your about to lose.

I'm thinking. I'm thinking. Whats a good guestion?

Ok. Ok. Quetzalcoatl – what do you eat besides…….sacrificial lamb?

Two seconds Quazzi –

1.

2.

– Your out of time, Quazzi. You didn’t answer his question. He beat you. Damn son, you did it.

First time for everything, Quazzi.

I told you this guy was good. (HASH)

I can’t do it. I can’t answer his question. I have been …….defeated. (TIMMY)

I knew I like this guy for a reason. (Hash) What’s that mean Quazzi? (TED)

Timmy? (SAM)

Damn, MIKEL, no one has ever beat Quazzi at his game. You are the very first one. I am impressed and I give you my apology. I am sorry. Which is also another first, me apologizing.

Quazzi, don’t worry, you still have round two. Don’t worry about a thing. I bet you get him in round two.

———————————————

Pt.5

Oh look at that, PESTO, is back already. Man what a difference that made. I hardly recogonize the kid. PESTO. PESTO. PESTO. My how you have grown.

He was only gone ten minutes.

Times irrelevant back home MIKEL. Quazzi, what gives man? Everyone is doing new things why don't you give this guy a title. You could share ONE silly title. It's not like you don't possess all the Evil titles or anything – what's in a title? You'll still be the Lord of Evil, Dr. Evil.

I guess I could make my new creation King of
Evil.

King EVIL PESTO. I like it. You're a king PESTO.

Let's see what your mom thinks? PESTY what do you think of your new KING EVIL PESTO.

My boy is all grown up –

Quazzi, you’re the best.

ABEL. ABEL. ABEL. ABEL.

Do you need my help?

Yes. Yes. Yes. Yes.

Will you do everything I say?

Yes. Yes. Yes.

Promise?

Yes. Yes. Yes.

Ok – shut up – I thought that would never work. Now where were we – oh, what are you doing here? We have a treaty, and in the name of Jesus of Nazareth you will not cross that line. You were banished and are no longer allowed here, you know that.

I wanted to know – are you planning an invasion?

Planning an “invasion”? Ooooooh, you think because we named PESTO the KING we were going to invade you. No nothing like that at all. We just wanted little PESTO to have some training and grow up a little. Then when they got back I started teasing my step brother and I talked him into giving the kid a title – just for kicks. It was a joke.

A joke?

Not against you or your kingdom. Just a joke between three brothers. We were making fun of Lord EVIL. The way EVIL never shares his titles with anyone after what I took from him in the bet against PESTO'S mom, back in the day. We were just playing around with EVIL. You know I respect Dr. EVIL. And we got a treaty. I wouldn't break our treaty for nothing. I respect your Kingdom. PESTO doesn't really want to be your King. It's just a title. Boy's being boys.

You're NOT going to invade?

No. No. I promise you that. I promise you that. We would never invade and break the treaty, we have waaaay to much going on here to think about another home. We were just beefing PESTO up. Make him bigger faster and stronger – if

we need him for what we have going on here. It’s a rescue operation now. Not an Apocalypse.

He cannot be our King. I wont allow it.

PESTO, does that bother you?

Uh, uh, uh, duh – duh- duh.

He says that’s fine by him. He didn’t want the silly title anyways.

He can be our Bishop.

You still get to kill PESTO. Would you like to be EVIL Bishop PESTO?

Uh- uh- uh- duh- duh

He said whatever pleases the Queen, he would love to be your EVIL Bishop.

Who’s this?

This? Oh he’s the new guy. We call him MIKEL. But you can call him later.

Kind of cute.

The next day on 4th Horseman Avenue.

ABEL, was that MEDUSA that came to the camp last night?

Yes it was MIKEL.

But why didn’t I turn to stone?

We don’t know, MIKEL. We don’t know.

So that was your wife last night?

Yeah MIKEL, that was my wife.

You glad to be away from her?

Do we have to talk about this.

Quazzi, she just didn’t look like your type. She looked, I don’t know – out of place for aguy like yourself –

MIKEL. He is still a LORD.

By an inherited right I was supposed to kill THE
LORD OF EVIL, the night before his family if you will came to share and show their last respects. I never seen a ghoul, and I have never seena ghoul cry - not like that. But when Abel told me what I had done.

Why is Quazzi not being himself today. He hasn't laughed once all day. What's wrong with Quazzi?

- MIKEL, you took a very good father from his family –

I did what? I can't do that. I won't do that. No. NO. I've lost two children. I know what it's like. I can't take a father from a child. Not even once. He has to go back. I set him free.

MIKEL, you defeated EVIL. Your supposed to kill Quazzi. It is written. It's written in stone. We have to do this.

No I don't. I have free will. And this is my will. I want Quazzi to go back to his family.

So that’s why everybody was all crying last night. Now I understand.

I can’t kill Quazzi. I won’t kill Quazzi. Quazzi is my friend. No-one with a laugh like Quazzi can be as bad as you say he is. It’s like he said, he just looks out for his Kingdom.

God’s going to have a problem with this MIKEL.

So what. She will just have to form a resentment and forgive me. I will not kill Quazzi. I want Quazzi to be with his family. He does have a really big family and I can’t take a father from his children. It’s been done to me twice, I won’t do it to him or any other man once. No she will just have to form a resentment, and forgive me – I won’t do it.

I CAN'T DO THAT. No set him free. I set him free. I don’t want Quazzi to be without his family.

Mikel, you can't it is written you **must** kill him.

Why so you can keep me out of heaven? Do it yourself.

No - I have free will, I set him free. I cannot take a father from his kids, no matter who they are. It's happened to me twice. I know the pain. I will not do it once. If a woman were ever to play that game with me, I would take the child to the father, even if I had to lie. No I have free will, and I can't kill Quazzi. I like him too much. No one with a laugh like that could ever be as evil as they say they are. I set him free this is my free will claimed and it will be done.

Mikel he was supposed to kill you.

Yeah, but he didn't, and now he can’t do it. And I set him free. This is my will CAIN. Set Quazzi free – you’re the KING of Kings. Get it done. If God has a problem with that, tell her to get here and tell me herself, and bring my grandmother with her. I’m sick of waiting for this HEAVEN on Earth bs like everyone else.

Pt.6

MIKEL, its time for round two of our challenge. This time, I get to ask the question, and you must answer the question. Same rules apply. You are also being timed.

Now, MIKEL, as you know from having been to the Kingdom of Darkness, we read in cubes. Each symbol can have two three and up to four meanings. We read in Acronyms. Our names are also acronyms, so your task is to tell us all SEVEN of our names, and what the names stand for. When you are ready you may begin, but just as in my challenge – you are being timed, so MIKEL, if you will – please tell me “What” are - our names? And what do they stand for?

Well, Quetzalcoatl, if I had to guess – YOUR name is S.A.M. Your name stands for
SCIENCE, ARETHMATIC, and MILITARY. You are one of the three LION'S of JUDAH.

Good. But that is only one – you have six left.

Continue.

Your name, sleepy head, is ASH – you were formerly known as HASH. You are responsible of relaxation, music, and art. Your name stands for HASH, ALCHOL, SEX, and HEROIN. Your name has been changed by those that pray to you because there is a global war against HEMP and you cannot make HASH without cannabis, the sacred herb of Egypt. That's why you are now being

called ASH. You are the second LION of JUDAH.

WOHW.

I told you he was good.

I like this guy. (HASH pets MIKEL'S head)

All, right MIKEL – my NAME, as I have told you before is, BOBBY – what does my name stand for?

Well, BOBBY, as you have called yourself to me, BOBBY was the one person in my book, **The AWAKENING**, which I had left anonymous. I called him "the quarterback" in my book. Your name is TIMMY. You call the shot's – you're the quarter back of this operation, you call

the plays. You are Father TIME. You are the brains of this operation. You are the EAGLE.

Very good.

He even hit your curve ball TIMMY – gotta hand to the boy.

CONTINUE, MIKEL – you still have FOUR of us left to name. you are being timed.

Your name is GUS. Your name stands for GOVERNANCE, UNITY, and SALVATION. You are the BEAR.

Continue….

Your name is TED – you are the last LION of
JUDAH. Your name stands for TAXES, EDUCATION and DEATH SENTENCES.

You are the third LION OF JUDAH, combined with your brothers you were the three wise men sent to kill Jesus of Nazareth. However, upon seeing his smile, you changed your heart, and lied, and were denied entitlement to live here anymore – you were banished from the relative over this event.

TWO MORE MIKEL – what are their names.

I don’t want to destroy anything – or start a war, but you two are one – you are the conclusion. Your name is AH. AND, your name is TACK – combined you’re the resolver; ATTACK is what you say at the end of a ruined diplomatic

situation. You’re the end game weapon. You are the TWO HEADED DRAGON.

Together, the seven of you are known as TIMMY AND THE WORKER’S.

All we have before us, you helped to create. You are also responsible for the birth of Jesus not turning into a murder. Very noble of you.

Most of what we see before us, the color’s, light, and patterns – you created TIMMY. All the roads, and construction came from your designs and teaching’s.

It’s because of you, that even though a leaf, or even a snowflake, even though each might look like the other – each leaf and snowflake has its own individuality. And ABEL and I agree, this place I call home, Earth, needs to be here. And one of your best works of art.

Thanks for the compliment MIKEL – I did poor my heart into this place. It’s good to meet someone that admires this planet enough to risk his life to save a tree.

Defeated again, EVIL. One eternity end’s and another begins EVIL – sorry EVIL. You are defeated. Nobody can win them all Timmy. Your time has come.

DAMN, HE DID IT.

I knew I liked him for a reason.

He’s good – He’s real good. But what do we do now. That could only mean- one thing, couldn’t it? TIMMY?

Yes, it could.

I’m sorry TIMMY. As it written. You have been beaten TWICE. Demz Duh Rulez.. And we have to follow the rules, don’t we, TIMMY? I told you TIMMY, he’s the one.

Timmy’s mood quickly changed to dread.

Pt.7

MAYHAM - How am I gonna keep this little DEVIL from going back to “lived” again? - He
always goes back. And for the same reason
every time -

“**I want tew see myh kiiiddd,”**
“**I want tew see myh kiiiddd,”**

I'm getting sick of this. How we gonna keep this little devil from going back to

lived again? There only so many dragons to slay. And this guy has slayed them all. This guys maxed out....I have no more dragons or vampires or anything for him to slay. He keeps slaying and weir next. We gotta stop him from going back.

We are out of dragons we for him to slay, whut now??

Let me tell you what I would do, boss. First I feel like a sandwich. Then, pass me the joint, and I will tell you what I would do.....I .... would .....destroy the place.

Destroy the entire thing - THEN HE CANT GO BACK, where would he go back to, boss? That would stop him.

EXCELLENT IDEA. MAYHAM, ARE YOU SURE I created YOU.....

I sometimes I wonder BOSS? I sometimes wonder.

MAYHAM, if we are going to just destroy the place, why did we fix all the abyss - if we're just gonna destroy the place?

Cause we like to take credit for everything.

Oh yeah, I forgot about that. Yes I do. Yes I do.

Plus we like to ruin their fun

Yes I do. Yes I do. Uh,Hmmm.

And we like to ruin their bragging rights.

Yes I do. Yes I do.

And they owe you money.

Oh yup yup yup - copy that.

And you hate cheaters – unless, of course, it’s you

yup yup yup And

we like to win ....

yes I do.....YES. I.

Do.

Plus we like to brag.

Yes I do...

And we don’t like them

No I DONNOT like them yup yup copy that.

Well then its settled let’s do it.

I once heard a wise old fisher man say don’t brag about if you can’t do it, and don’t do it unless you can brag about it.

Oh MAYHAM, you got it backwards but you were always stoned and my best student

I love you MAYHAM - Setting you free was the best thing I ever did, no one was ever gonna win this war and be fighting all the time. Man are we lucky I set you free.

I hope they open with Ripple. What about you?

Rhapsody in Red.

That’s a good one.

Chapter 14

Momma I’m coming home

Pt.1

Listen Quazzi, Cain, brothers - before we get down on ourselves ABOUT the disaster this place is, and has become, let me explain something to you like this - there is this band called the Beastie Boy’s, they put out this album after their first hit album called **PAUL'S BOTIQUE**, but look that album flopped. It flopped bad - nobody liked it - but then something strange happened.

12 years later.

12 years later, after three more albums, Paul’s Boutique caught on. And suddenly everybody everywhere was bumping this old Beastie Boy’s album that almost sealed their fate as failures - this place EARTH, this is our PAUL'S BOTIQUE.

NOBODY LIKED IT WHEN IT CAME OUT - BUT HERE'S what happened, the B-Boy’s keep making music, they didn’t let the critics and Paul’s Boutique’s failure get them down or stop them from making music.

And then two albums and twelve years later, someone plays Paul’s Boutique again, and it hit like a brick. Here’s why. 12 years later more people knew who the B-Boys were now, and the genius of this record that was once a financial flop finally hit the cord. It was just ahead of its time. Way ahead of its time.

Best album they ever made. Most bought, and sought after, record they have ever made. But Paul’s Boutique sat there for years doing nothing. At the time it was new and fresh, no one liked it - just like us, and here where we are now, with this Apocalypse and earth, and theses humans. But listen fellas, they all want this “relative” back home now. This is the new Paul’s Boutique. I know we

can “create” another EARTH, I know we can. But it won’t be the same.

MIKEL can re-write ABEL VS. CAIN: THE AWAKENING, sure he could - but brothers, it wouldn't be the same or the coolest thing that it is, which is unique.

We can't let the ones we love back home down. They want this “relative” back home now. I mean really want this. Dad showed me the support we have back home to retrieve the “relative”, its big- I mean really big. Even I was amazed.

I know you want to give up - just nuke the place - have an Apocalypse -- but guys, we don’t quit, we succeed. Forget about winning, that’s what got us this messed up - let’s just succeed this time.

This place, this skin, these eye's, these colors, these animals - this water, this air - we can’t “exactly” copy this. We’d be foolish to think that we can.

Let's not get down just cause it looks like we should; and I admit it - we should be down on ourselves. Quazzi, we kill this place, you gotta go too. I don't want to lose you too, Quazzi. You’re my brother. Even if you are from a different mother. I don't want to give you up just cause our task looks impossible. Do you hear me? My once second in command?

If we decide to pull it, I gotta say goodbye to one of the best brothers I have ever had Quazzi. I can't let you go, brother. No matter how bad we messed things up here, all I can say is - let’s not give up. Let's just fix it.

Listen to this too. Coca-Cola once had this great idea to change their product. They came out with New and Improved COKE. For no reason at all. They just up and changed their product for a new and improved soda. It flopped. It wasn’t like the original COKE. Once again no-one liked it. No-one liked the “new” COKE.

And they lost a lot of money doing this. So they went back to the “original” recipe. But when they did, something was different about it. It wasn’t the same tasting recipe. Or at least it never felt or tasted the same after they pulled that trick.

We can’t re-create an accident – brothers. Not this one, MFRS, pun intended. We have to fix this one. No matter how much this place is broken we’re the only ones that can fix it ---------- supposedly.

CAIN, EVIL – I know it looks like an impossible task, but it can be done. I know it can. Let’s not make the same mistake COKE made and think we can re-create “an accident”.

ABEL, why do you think we can fix this?

EVIL, because I just thunk about it, that’s why. Jesus man. Sorry CAIN. But ya’ll

always say, and especially you EVIL, if you can think about it, “IT” can be done. And I think we can fix it ---------- maybe.

Oh little General. Always the optimistic one.
Look at this place, it’s nothing like before.

Nothing like before? You’re here now. That’s more “like before” than we’ve had it here in eons. Not like before? I’m so sick of this out of you, EVIL. What happened to that never say never attitude you used to carry so well? Let me guess, you lost it when you saw how screwed up the place is – and I don’t blame you. I’d be depressed too. It is screwed up. It’s a mess. But now that you’re here, we can fix it ------ possibly.

I know we can fix it-------- maybe. EVIL, come on man cheer up. Don’t forget about Paul’s Boutique, EVIL. This is our

Paul’s Boutique. We can’t let everybody back home down.

WE DON’T LOSE, Fellas!!! We succeed! Forget about winning. That’s no longer important. We want to have success instead.

Good speech twerp. You hear this guy?

I know it’s not an impossibility, EVIL. I know it’s not --------- maybe.

Pt.2

Hey, Hey, hey – what’s up ABEL- TOTH

It’s ABEL- TOTH Jr. now. Just call me General, Malforth. What are you doing here?

You always said early is on time around here, we on time ABEL. We kill the red guys, we kill the white guys, we kill the blue guys – who we killing next, ABEL?

THIS IS MY APOCALYPSE, Malforth!! I'm the General!!! Who invited you?

CAIN called us in. We're in Apocalypse 2AAB. He can do that.

Long sigh – I guess he has the right to do that.
Well I got some bad news. It's no longer a killing operation; this Apocalypse has turned into a "rescue operation". We're going to save the place
---------- possibly.

We don't do rescue operations ABEL, we do killing operations. What we gonna kill? Don't be silly, just tell me.

I’m serious Malforth; we are going to save this place this time…….possibly. We just haven’t figured out exactly how yet, I mean look at the place. It’s a wreck.

Roger that, ABEL. Well, when you have a target for me, call me.

Hey, wait a minute, don’t leave yet I gotta ask you something.

What’s that little ABE?

Got any ideas on how I can save this place?

ABEL, what’s the objective REALLY?

We want to try and get the love light on so the mothership can see us, you know what it looks like out there. Once they can see us we are saved. They're not that far away – it's just cluttered with our past victories. ALL OF THEM.

Copy that. Well, if I had an idea it would be –
LETS GO KILL SOME STUFF.

Thou shalt not kill Malforth, it's a rescue operation. You can't kill who your rescuing Malforth. Unless of course if CAIN commands you to and we give up. Ok I got an idea Malforth, go out there and find out who is behind these chemtrails still being in my sky and kill them. I can't stop them. So that tells me something out of my jurisdiction is doing this.
You want to do that?

I put Wooden on recon, he claims we're going to be okay, but the chemtrails are

still up there. I want to get those things out of my sky. Can you do it?

I have to pass this idea by CAIN, he’s the boss. But otherwise yes. You know we good at killing. We do killing better than rescue operations. I just wanted to say “Hi” little General. Been a while since we fought on the same side. Good to see you again, ABEL.

Good to see you to, Malforth. No hard feelings?

We can’t hold grudges, ABEL, demz duh rulez. All is forgiven, commander.

I ain’t your commander no more, Malforth.

You’ll always be my commander, commander. Best I ever had.

Imma tell CAIN you said that -

ABEL and his old second in command of the Hell’s Angels, Malforth. did twinkle fingers, and then Malforth was gone as quick as he came.

Pt.4 The

next morning – at the vortex.

We want your full surrender.

Oh, believe me when I say this, I think it’s adorable that you think you are so big and powerful.

That’s where it comes from –

He’s pointing at me, isn’t he?

(look’s at MAYHAM, points at invaders, looks away, points at ABEL)

I’m used to it. Where were we – oh yes, fool surrender. Ok, whatever you are, I understand you want a surrender.

You want my full surrender? Alright fool, I surrender. But while I remove all that I care about, as it is customary in war and surrenders, let me inform you about

your future troubles as you enjoy my full surrender, fool.

There is a mother ship that is 1 million times bigger than this entire Universe. And it is on its way here. NOW. If that mother ship does not see you, you will be crushed like a bug on a wind shield.

And when I get safely there on the ship, I will turn right back around and destroy this planet atom by atom – one atom at a time. Just to let off a little stress I’m having trying to save this place, and have some fun too. Caspice?

I am not called General DEATH, defender of the galaxies, because I am a nice guy that runs from anything as – dare I say UGLY and TINY and devilishly cute as yourself.

Now let me ask you a question? Can you stop the inevitable doom that's coming this way, the way I can, since it is my family that is on its way – or would you like my help?

That's what I thought. Now tell me about yourself. Who are you? And why are you here? Are you a refugee? Do you need our help? Are you running from something? Like responsibility? Justice? Whats wrong with your planet? Did you destroy it? Were you run off, or did you run off? I need to know everything.

If you are running from something I need to know what it is and why it is chasing you. How big is it? Does it hunt you? Why does it hunt you? Did you do something wrong and your hiding here to escape justice? Or are you prey, because the way you act – I can tell – you are not prey, you're a predator. Why are you on – - MY PLANET?

Answer me fool.

NOW, or I will not assist you and just give you my surrender fool. I’m sorry, my full surrender.

I don’t think they heard you boss.

MAYHAM.

It’s the look of fear. I don’t think they heard you. I think there still figuring out how small they are. Takes time ya know, to let all that info sink into their about to be destroyed bird brains, got to give them credit, they must be related to you ABEL, their as cocky as you are.

All right MAYHAM, that’s enough.

We will retreat.

Where ever you think you are going to go, let me make this clear to you – that place will be destroyed. The mother ship only cares about this Universe, and this planet. Where ever you think you are going is not going to be safe to you for very long. If you want to survive, you will tell me everything I need to know.

You obviously don't understand hyperspace dimensional travel. Let me explain it to you as easily as I can. Reality is like an onion. It exists in layers. As the ship approaches reality's lay on top of each other. Closer than ever before. Tears along the walls of this reality we are in can occur, which is most likely how you got here. I need to know about these tears so I can have them fixed. Quickly.

Hyperspace dimensional travel is like water going down a drain, accept space doesn't spiral – it is stretched. They are not traveling ALL THE WAY HERE. Instead, they are traveling half of the way, and pulling this universe the other half of the way, and we will collide in the middle of the distance that was once between us.

As they pull us, which you can feel the pull beneath your feet from time to time - that is not your imagination, that is them locking onto us – or trying, rather. As they get closer, reality's we do not want with us can enter through rips that occur. If there are too many rips, or if a rip does not get mended in time, this universe will disintegrate.

And our efforts to save the reality you so care to be takeover, will dissolve into nothing. I don't know where you come from, but that place albeit a planet

galaxy or another Universe, that place is slightly less important than this place. It will be destroyed and we will fix it later. We promise. That’s the deal we have made with the Galactic Council, but you obviously aren’t a part of that council, so tell me – who are you? And where do you come from? Who is your creator? And who is his King? And why haven’t any of us ever met before now.

I will give you some time to think things over, till then feel free to leave me alone as I try to save your tiny pathetic ass from extinction.
That is all. Leave me.

Best surrender yet, BOSS. Best surrender yet. You think they bought it?

MAYHAM, they’ll be lucky if I let them make it.

Roger that BOSS. Want me to follow ‘em. Never mind. Be back soon, BOSS.

Pt.5

I can’t take this anymore. I don’t know who the fuck is doing it, but every time I go to fix and edit my book; all the corrections are gone and I have to start over. I’m being followed everywhere I go. It is not safe with Satan worshipers sharpening knives and chanting down in the wash at night – I can’t sleep with bike cops riding by making threats about me.
This is not good. This is too much.

That church, that church is going to fail. They will not help me. I have been going there for two years now and the only help they have ever given me is a life

changing $20.00. I don’t want them to fail, but they don’t want to help either.

I’m leaving. If I’m truly the sacrificial lamb, then
I should get LAST RITES. I deserve LAST RITES. Anyone else in my position would get last rites.

What do you want as your last rite, MIKEL?

I want to write REDEMPTION, then you can kill me and have your stupid Apocalypse, what would I care? I’ll be dead.

Write REDEMPTION?

It’s the last book in the series. We just wrapped up The Reckoning, but editing will have to be finished somewhere else

because the powers that be, won't let me finish it here. I'm sick of having to re-do my work over and over. I have spent the last four days redoing my edits.

They've shut down the greyhound station; shut off my bus pass, they've taken the Bob Marley's Mellow Mood drinks off the shelf – that helped me get you fuckers to sleep. They have shut down every public computer that I used for writing The Awakening. Banned me from the library, along with my book. They have shut down every food pantry I once used– forcing me to eat in one location. They're watching every move I make and ever computer that's available to me. ONE.

And they ruined the last four days of my work.
Writing a book might not look like work to them. But it's work to me. This is not my country. This is anti- American. I'm

supposed to have freedom of speech. This country isn't supposed to be allowed to "spy" on us.

I'm a fn homeless person! Those spy's stay in an $80.00 a night free full breakfast and watch me sleep in the cold wind and rain. They could come talk to me, bring a joint, some beer, sit down and talk. BUT THEY WOULD RATHER SPY.

I possess no weapons of any kind. I'm not a threat to anyone or anything. How could I be? There's no explanation for why I'm being spied on, harassed, followed, beaten and molested by police – fuck this country. If I spoke Spanish better I'd hit the wall running. I'm fed up with this place. I myself am ready for the Apocalypse just to get rid of you two and these police that "wanna take over the world." Fuck this shit, why should I care

to save this place after all this nonsense?

I’m done with the idea that North Side Church will help me, even when my life is in danger. That church will not help me. I would know, they’ve had two years to help. It’s not like they haven’t had ample amount of time to make a teeny weeny difference. $20.00? How’s a person supposed to live off .05$ a month, this isn’t the 1800’s anymore. And I didn’t need a hand out – I needed a hand up.

This is bull shit. I got people that intend to kill me to see if they can start the Apocalypse. START THE END OF THE WORLD. Are they that stupid? What if this was JUST A BOOK. Are they going to kill me and say “I knew that religion was just lies.” I don’t get this.

There are people “crying” and “begging” me for forgiveness when I go to the

bathroom at the Del Taco!! I don't give one rat's ass what they need forgiveness for – that's your job, not mine. This is getting weird. I need to see my daughter. I need to see my mother, and I would like to see my father and sister too.

REDEMPTION?

Yeah, my last rite is I want to write the book REDEMPTION. Either way, we are not staying here another night; we are on the road CAIN.

But MIKEL, this might start -

WIDE SPREAD PANIC.

Well then we'll just have to get on a **WIDESPREAD PANIC** tour. That would be perfect. That's what I want to do

CAIN. Then I could show you some of the good stuff about being human, and leave this misery behind. Weir outta here.

Pt.6

Sorry to drop in you mother, but I need to edit my new book. I couldn’t get this done in Tucson. So I came here. Do you mind?

Well, I guess I don’t. Welcome home. Come on in. Why did you leave Tucson?

I wanted to visit with you for a minute before the Apocalypse gets more out of hand.

Oh Mikel, would you stop with the apocalypse thing already. There is no Apocalypse going on.

Ohhhh kkkkkkaaaaayyyy

Listen, it’s uncomfortable for me to talk about too so let’s just go have dinner.

Pt.7

Mikel, I worry about you.

Mom, you worry about me all the time, what else is new?

No, this time is different. You say that you're general death, that's not good, Mikel.

I never said "I" was General DEATH. I said "ABEL" was General DEATH. ABEL is my soul. I am Mikel. I'm just stuck in the middle. I'm stuck between CAIN and ABEL'S fight over the fate of humanity and this "thing" that they call "the relative".

Doesn't sound right, Mikel. You sound crazy. This worry's me.

Mom, how many Jew's that followed Moses to the Red Sea, how many of them do you think thought he was crazy? I bet you all of them did. Wouldn't you think he's crazy? Romans behind you, Red Sea in front of you, following a voice in your head.

Do you hear voices in your head?

No. I don't. They channel through me. They take over my body to conduct themselves. I do not hear voices in my head. I'm a medium for CAIN. ABEL is just my soul.

Yeah, but you say he's the 4th Horseman. You say he's General DEATH. That doesn't scare you?

Well, yes, it did. However , ABEL has proven to me that he has humanity's best interest in mind. Mom, this has been going on for ten years now – I'm quiet used to it. I begged the church and even my father – and you too, mind you, for help. Every single one of you laughed it off. All of ya'll gave me nothing but grief, said I was making fun of you and your religion.

Which I wasn’t, I was just honestly terrified.

But, come on, after 10 years – you kind of give in a little, just accept it. I’m done running from this. I can’t.

They channel through you? You’re their medium?

Something like that.

What can you tell me about them?

Well, they’re like raising children. I’m glad I had those very few years with Shaolin, or I’d be lost. CAIN is addicted to chocolate chip cookies, almost killed me to ween him off his chocolate chip cookie addiction.

Chocolate chip cookie addiction?

Oh, don’t make it sound any crazier than it already is. Yes. Chocolate chip cookie addiction. Fucker almost stopped my heart over getting him some cookies, pretty scary. CAIN is just like a child. It’s been hard to get him to sleep through the night, pee, walk, eat three meals a day. Yeah I feel like I’m dealing with children, mother.

What else can you tell me?

Well they are spirits. That makes them divine in nature. They don’t have or do the things we do. They’re responsible for our creation, and the creation of our society.

ABEL is a very good politician, that has only our best interest at heart.

ABEL is General DEATH?

Yes, ABEL is General DEATH.

And he has our best interest at heart? Sounds pretty crazy, Mikel. You sure you don't need help? You don't think the divorce, having Shaolin taken from you, and the house fire, and all this homelessness you've been through, hasn't just made you snap.

Mom, as much as it pains me to say this – yes, and no. The vortex was real. Other people felt it. Other people know it's there. There were people that were there when the New World Order Weapon was initiated; they saw it – the world turned into a giant computer. I wasn't alone. Craziness is lonely. No-one can "see" my craziness if it's just a mental problem. But other people saw that New World Order Weapon. They

were there with me when it happened. We were all freaking out.

And mother, that is confirmed information.

Confirmed information? What's that mean?

Confirmed information means that the information comes from two sources. When I went to jail last time, there was this guy in the cell with me. And we all started talking. He brings up the New World Order Weapon, and explained how it worked.

I felt like he was digging for information, so I just kept my mouth shut. But he claimed that the world has satellites all around the planet, and when they're ready, they're going to flip the switch

and end all the world’s problems. No more hunger, no more divorce, no more boys, no more girls. No more accidents, even if you tried. I’ve seen it. It’s not pretty. Eight very ugly colors – forever.

And you broke it?

Yes, I broke it.

How?

I dropped a lighter. They have to assimilate the lighter, but there’s nothing to burn over there. They have no idea what a lighter is for. They don’t know what a lighter does.

You dropped a lighter? Mikel! You don’t think you need some help? So what do you want to do?

I’m going to go and see Shaolin. I have to see her. It’s been too long, and it’s just important. I have nothing going well for me in Tucson, so I might move up there.

Just keep me out of it. Don’t even mention that I helped you to her mother. She might cut me off from seeing my granddaughter. I don’t want you to ruin what I have with Shaolin.

I will keep you out of my mouth. Just get me to Dallas and under your name, I don’t know what is following me, but I have to do all this traveling under the radar.

I was doing my best to keep the “Sacrificial
Lamb” issue out of our conversation. Also, Quetzalcoatl being with us, along for the ride. CRAZY? Yeah I feel crazy alright. But how could I deny the undeniable? After 10 years.

The events that started the original Apocalypse happened in November of 2015. It was now April of 2017. I spent two weeks at my mother’s editing my book Abel vs Cain: The Reckoning.
I didn’t tell my mother anything about the new Apocalypse, or discovering the alien refugee’s. She would just think I was crazy, like everyone else, so I kept it to myself, and simply told her “get your bucket list done.”

_____ Pt.8

The next day on the North Side Church facebook page appeared -

Pastor Alice –

Have you ever seen the most beautiful picture in the world? It rest in Hiroshima. In that city of course the place cannot be populated for ten thousand years because of the radiation from the atom bomb - but don't tell the happy people of Hiroshima and Nagasaki this, they look very happy.

Anywho, there in the thriving city of Hiroshima is a picture that should leave an impression on you. It rest in peace at the atom bomb holocaust museum.

Let's back up, I know your mother taught you not to fight, I know she did. She probably even said "don't hit your brother" or "don't hit your sister", and in the thriving city of Hiroshima is a picture of a boy playing with a BUTTERFLY.

This picture is important BECAUSE - while grown intelligent men, who did not learn the lesson that their mother had taught them growing up were playing let's destroy the world with WAR, that boy was with his family
PLAYING WITH A BUTTERFLY. And now only his shadow remains .The blast of the atom bomb that destroyed Nagasaki embedded this young boy's shadow onto the sidewalk – forever. With the butterfly on his hand.

While other grown men could not stop fighting, a child was dying to play with a butterfly.

So Pastor Alice, you need another sign. Don't worry I get it, I do, you just have to have another sign. But don't you remember the deal? I said, "No MORE peaceful signs", do you remember?

So then, here is your next sign. Just recently
MIKEL published and gave you his new book, The Reckoning. In that book are 60 chapters, but only 59 are numbered.

Just the other day, the President of the United
States, Donald Trump, fired 60 missiles at Syria for retaliation against a chemical attack against his own people. 60 missiles were fired, 59 hit their target. Missile 57 went into the ocean.

Now, like I said, MIKEL just handed you his new book, The Reckoning, and in that book there are 60 chapters, and only 59 are numbered – chapter 57 is the chapter that is not numbered.

Who do you think you're messing with? The title General DEATH doesn't mean anything to you? I told you, no more

peaceful signs. If you don’t start acting in your faith, religion, and job – I’mma destroy this place filling your “sign” request, pastor. I am not to be played with. I am not Dr. do little. I am the general - General DEATH - of TWO armies. The Army of the Damned. And the Army of Darkness. Which I prefer you call Dorkness, it is MY Apocalypse – I can call them what I want to.

But pastor, there will be no more peaceful signs. I don’t think you really need another sign from GOD. I don’t. I think you just like bossing GOD around, like a waiter, asking H.I.M. for sign after sign after sign. All you have to do, pastor, is initiate your faith when you have received your sign. It’s as easy as being nice. Don’t ask me for another sign or more people will die. Pastor Alice, that is all.

Yours truly – the Prince of Dorkness. General DEATH. See I still like it better than Darkness.

Don’t you?

Chapter 15

Daddy’s got those Deep Ellum Blues

Pt.1

Dallas, Texas – part two of my summer of LAST RITES -

First night at my old hometown in Dallas, Texas – walking the streets of my old neighborhood on Greenville Avenue. I hadn’t been home in 20 years. Memories flooded my head.

HASH, we are now back in MIKEL’S home town of Dallas, Texas. This is where MIKEL spent most of his time addicted to

heroin. MIKEL, would you care to share your story and tears with HASH about your decision to stop heroin? Asked ABEL

MIKEL began, Her name was Zanney. She
was the prettiest little girl I ever saw. Her real name was Xanadu, but we called her Zanney for short. She was young, possibly four years old. She was why I quit doing heroin.

We were at her father Zac's funeral. He had died because of heroin. I had been to many funerals because of heroin. However, this one did it for me. This funeral was the reason I quit.

Zanney was on her mother's shoulders and we were all burying Zac's casket. We caught each other's gaze, and she starred at me and smiled. I knew Zanney

pretty well because of my habit. My girlfriend and I were at Zac and Zanney's house at least once a week – shooting heroin and trying to act as normal possible.

Zanney was a very pretty child. Blonde curly hair, blue eyes, and such a lovely child. She loved her dad too. She loved her dad a lot. Zac was a good guy. Just addicted to heroin is all.

Like I said we were at Zac's funeral and a bunch of people were there to say good-bye, Zanney was on her mother's shoulders, and she caught me looking at her. She did not recognize most of the people there, but she recognized me. And when she recognized me, she smiled at me.

Her smile was priceless, her smile made me smile. Always did. And we held onto

that smile as long as we could before she remembered why we were all there, she was burying her father. And the look on her face changed – her smile disappeared, and I never saw her smile again.

It was on that day that I said – NEVER AGAIN. No matter what it takes. I will never burry another friend because of heroin.

HASH had indeed begun to cry.

She was a pretty girl. HASH cried. Very pretty. MIKEL, I invented the poppy plant, this is all my fault. MIKEL, I had intended to fix it – but then TIMMY, GUS, TED, SAM and I got banished. It's such a pretty flower. It was never supposed to do so much harm. I made that plant to be medicine. However, because we were banished, I couldn't fix it.

Everything evolves, MIKEL. CAIN interjected. But because we haven't been here, it's not evolving the way we had originally intended. It's good to see you let HASH shed some tears. I have learned from you, MIKEL, crying can be important.

Hell, I have tears to shed myself. I was very popular here in Dallas. I helped a bunch of people get to an early grave here in Dallas. Right there was Paul's house. I buried Paul.
Over there was Zac and Zanney's house. I have as much guilt as HASH. It's not like I meant to be Mr. Popular, it's just something I fell into because of the people I knew – and because of my older sister. My sister is the one that opened lots of doors for me. We were party animals.

I know if she would have known that the "fun" we were having would lead to me

getting addicted to heroin – I know she would have never let me hang out with her. My sister was very much into the Dallas nightlife scene. She knew everyone. She was quiet popular. And I was her little brother, the annoying one that moved onto other things.

See boys, before I left Dallas, I never went without. I had friends all over the place. Never lived the way I do now. The house fire has something to do with it yes, but it’s the moving around part that has more to do with it. Since the divorce I have moved no less than 15 times, that’s once a year. It’s hard to meet people and form friends when you’re always moving. Hard to keep and find work. House’s? Please I’ve had plenty, just nothing long term. But who could, moving across the country once a year, or more.

I grew up here in Dallas. I spent 29 years here. I knew every road and couldn’t go anywhere without running into someone I knew. I miss those day’s sometimes. But other times, I’m grateful.

Because you fall into a pattern of being what people expect from you. I accidentally became the biggest heroin dealer in my circles. I didn’t even know I was the biggest dealer, I just thought I was going to the phone a lot for other people.

When I found out that it was me that was incidentally the biggest heroin dealer on Greenville Avenue, I knew something had to be done. I wasn’t going to get away from everyone’s expectation of me, so instead I got away from everyone else instead.

It took me another four years to get myself completely off heroin, but it was that look on Zanney's face at Zac's funeral, that I kept in my mind to quit, and quit for good.

I've been off of heroin over 20 years. I remember the last time I had a serious doubt if I could quit, I was in San Francisco, in Golden Gate Park. I was on a set of swings, strung out and homeless. The relationship between Atom and I had just begun, and I was just finishing my first year of a poverty vow.

I remember looking into the moon after being on a bender – and just screaming, "Please get me off this dope. I can't do this alone. "Atom assured me, as he always had – with few words – "you're doing just fine. Hang in there."

Pt.2

CAIN, I have a question? Wasn't your original intention for the Earth and us humans destruction? Cause if I'm not mistaken, that's exactly why we are here, why I am going thru this shit?

Yes, MIKEL, it was.

So then, let me put it to you like this, I turned my life over to you, I turned my life over to Jesus Christ – that's you. And you want to destroy the place and me and the rest of humanity, as it is written. Let me tell you something J.C. I'm not okay with this. I'm not okay with this type of b.s. at tall. And if I can accept you; I can reject you!!

J.C. – I command you to leave me. You're driving me insane. GO.

MIKEL –

Don’t MIKEL me shorty. ABEL, I want him out of here. I got free will, and this is my will. What he did back at my moms and this trip has got me stressed, and I don’t want somebody around who’s going to destroy the place – my home. Goodbye, CAIN.

You have to go big brother – he has a point. He is in big trouble with his mother over you. In addition, your church kicked him out over you. And you still reserve the right to destroy his home. You have to honor his free will.

ABEL?

Go CAIN.

Glad he’s gone. Men what am I supposed to do? I’m sorry about that but that was not a pleasant visit at my mothers. AND I HATE TO FLY. I hate traveling period. I’m pissed cause I miss sleeping in a bed. That was my old bed back at my mom’s house. I miss taking two baths a day. I hate being dirty. My bags been stolen already. I told her not to buy that backpack now I don’t have anything. My dad’s going to think I showed up with nothing, he knows I’m not working and haven’t worked in a very long time. OH I HATE traveling!

Quazzi, you’ll be fn next if you don’t act right here at my dad’s. We can’t have all these spirits running amuck with me here. My dad will call an exorcists, or try it himself.

Wow, CAIN’S never been rejected MIKEL. I don’t know how he’s going to take this.

Two hours later –

CAIN, when were you going to tell me you were back?

How does he do that?

I can’t tell you everything, Demz duh rules - but you smell like smoke. Thanks Granite Mountain Shadow Crew.

CAIN, I’m just stressed. I hate to fly. My bag got stolen. I am lost in my own hometown. I haven’t been here in years. And lest we forget, I’m being served my LAST RITES; not exactly a comfortable position, CAIN. I’m sorry I snapped at you, but you boys are not treating my hospitality fairly. I don’t want to die CAIN, you gotta a problem with that?

No, MIKEL. Thank you for having me back, we promise to behave.

_____ Pt.3

Upon arriving at my Dad’s house -

Dad, you know that I had to fix my teeth again after what happened to me back in Humboldt – the last time cops beat me up. So there I was at the Dentist and I told him the story about how Terry and you met. Now he said something to me, and I have to know if this is true or not – now your secrets safe with me, I will never tell – but I have to know.

You don’t even have to answer, cause I will know by the look on your face; but I told the Doctor how you had accidentally hit a nerve and crossed your wife’s eyes. And he just starts laughing – says to me “your step must be really hot – cause that’s a trick they teach us in school.”

So my question to you is this, cause I know Terry is very hot, is he telling me the truth? Did you really learn this trick at dental school to meet hot girls?

Guilty as charged.

Well, at least an education worked out well for two of us. Oh dad. You hustler you. Good to see you didn't miss everything in school.

I remember that day too. I was raising you, ya know, and I was working odd jobs. Hard for me to stay awake in class, and the teacher said this," This stuff can be so boring but, let me show you a trick that can help you pick up chicks." And I perked up from a dead sleep – what? Pick up chicks? You can pick up chicks with a job like this? I'm all ears."

Needless to say I paid closer attention to my teacher after he showed me that. And yes, I used the trick on Terry. But I hardly regret it. Do you blame me?

No. Not at all. I just think it’s funny to catch you in a lie. After all the years of you catching me in lies, now we are finally going in another direction.

Mikel, let’s have a beer.

A beer? You sure, I’m only 47 – this would be the first time we’ve ever had a beer together. I’ve only been waiting 25 years. Dad I got to tell you something – I know that you think that I left TEXAS because of you, because of you and me. But, dad, I left Texas for other reasons. Texas did me wrong dad, and when I was arrested for reporting a rape in progress, I formed a resentment and took off. But, dad, I was only going to

end up dead or in prison here. The last time I went to court in Texas for having rolling papers – the courts tried to give me a “Habitual Criminal” charge – that carry’s 40 years, dad. Just for having rolling papers. Rolling papers.

Texas was never going to treat me fair, so I left. It had nothing to do with you or me.

How long you staying?

I just want to fix my tooth and get back on the road. Like I told you, my goal is to go and talk to Shaolin. I have to visit her, it has been too long. I have something to ask her. And it’s real important. So, this is just a layover as I head to West Virginia to visit with Shaolin.

What’s that, that you have to ask her, if you don’t mind me asking?

Well, I will tell you, since you are my dad, but just like our little secret do not spread it around – I have been without a relationship since her mother and I split up. And it’s going on ten years now. I figured since she will be dating soon, I would ask her if I could date again. It is not as if I need her to say yes or no, I just wanted to be a noble man and pop the question – out of respect to her; explain to Shaolin why I haven’t dated to her personally. Girl’s my age usually have another child, and I don’t want Shaolin to think I am replacing her. It hurt me when you got with your ex-wife and she had children. I don’t want to hurt Shaolin, I just want to find a partner. I’m tired of being lonely.

Pt.4

Well there it is. My last house in Dallas. Never thought I'd see this place again. Never wanted to see this place again. But here we are. This is where things really got out of hand for me. This is where I lived with Jennifer. This is where we lived when "MISS YOU", my first child, was born, and given up for adoption. Jennifer and I were addicted to Heroin. Very badly HASH. I couldn't raise a child and be addicted to Heroin. I had to give the child up for adoption, no child deserves a parent like that.

That was very noble of you MIKEL, to not let your child go through that with you.- HASH applied.

Yeah, well I wasn't ready for the pain that followed with such a "noble" decision. I was only 28, I had such a good life here. I never felt that kind of loss before. It's a deep rooted loss to

have to lose a child. It’s painful on such a deep deep level.

MIKEL, since we’re here, would you be man enough to take CAIN and Quazzi to that corner
– I think you know the one I am talking about. - ABEL asked

Absolutely. As you can tell this is a housing area of Dallas, and like most neighborhoods here in Dallas it’s set up with street, houses, alley, houses, street, houses, alley, houses, street. Now the alleys in this neighborhood are very old. This is a very old Dallas neighborhood. One of the first. And the alleys are useless. No-one uses the alleys around here. You don’t even put your trash in the alley because trash trucks can’t drive down them. No-one can.

On the night ABEL is talking about, I still had that RFID implant inside me; it wouldn’t come out for another year or more. I had a bad habit of doing drugs. A real bad habit. And I was on a bender, as per usual, and I couldn’t go to sleep.

There was a girl that I had been doing drugs with earlier that night. She had ripped me off for some money. I just wanted to get in her pants, get her to love on me. But she had ripped me off for some money, and I was at home trying to go to sleep and forget about the evening.

I kept having these ideas that if I went back to where she and I had been last, she would meet me half way and make it up to me. I could see the entire scene in my mind. I would walk through the neighborhood and when I got to the street closet to her house she would

meet me at the corner wearing red shorts.

But I had to take a knife.

It was about 2 a.m. I struggled all night long to just go to bed, but I finally gave into my thoughts. I grabbed a knife and went in the direction of her house.

Now like I said – the layout goes street houses, alley, houses, street, houses, alley, houses, street – and I would meet her at the last street. And she would be there in red shorts – those were the visions I had been having in my head for the last three hours. The same visions I couldn’t get to sleep over.

This girl had never been nice to me. She just never was. And when I got to the street corner, there she was in red

shorts. And she did something very out of character for her. She walked up to me and gave me a huge kiss with tongue. It was a very good kiss.

Then it happened. A very strange voice entered my head, and said this – I will never forget this. The strange voice said, “This will be fun, watch this – RAPE HER.” I got scared. My Dad raised me in the church, so I believed this voice to be the voice of Satan, and I pushed her away, turned around, and walked back to my house quickly.

But here is what makes this story strange. As I was on my way back to my house, crossing the same path I took to the corner, the alley that had been empty - now had a cop car sitting there. I could see it well. He was just sitting there. And he wasn’t there the first time I walked past this alley. That alley had been empty. I know it was empty.

When I saw the cop car I dropped the knife I was carrying. I went to my house and went to bed, freaked out. I know now that this was an MK ULTRA attack by Dallas Police.

I don’t think all cops are bad, but I do believe that Dallas cops and Texas cops have a bad way of doing business. Dallas Police, it cannot be denied, have a hand to play in the train wreck of our democracy for the assassination of JFK. This is where the tide turned in America for our feeble Democracy.

Not every Dallas Police had their hand in the assassination of our elected President, this I am aware of, but someone in the Dallas Police did, and in a country that has as much to lose as we do – being the first of its kind, a Democracy; a small amount of treason is too much treason. And what happened here that night is inexcusable; forcing people to commit crimes of this nature. And forcing the people to have

addictions they don’t deserve with this type of clandestine operation. It’s unfair. And I wish I had never found that RFID implant, because knowing their cheating make living here harder. I know there are people that don’t have the populations interest in their heart. Some are Police, and others are leaders of the nation. I’m glad my addictions gone. But I wish it had nothing to do with an RFID implant to begin with.

I don’t know if the RFID implant had anything to do with my addiction, but I know it had something to do with those visions and voice inside my head that night.

In Texas, I noticed after this event reading the newspapers the number of people that claim that during a murder or robbery – voices in their head told them to do it, commit murder. It’s alarming how many people that commit

mass murders all are accused of being mentally challenged, even if they were shot and killed at the scene of the crime. That will always be the white wash in the press- mentally unstable. This is the corner it happened on. And that there is the alley I caught a cop car waiting to ambush me as I fled the scene.

When was that MIKEL? - CAIN asked.

1996.

Thank you, MIKEL.

Chapter 16

Bring it on HOME

Pt.1

Aye DARE. Der's **Adair's** – talk about an old hangout. Can't believe the 'ol bar still a dare. I used to live above that place, see that window above the door? That was my room.

Look at that. The 'ol bar is still here. We need a drink, but before we go in, let me tell you what my friends and me used to do, just to get some laughs. The boy's and I used to live over that bar. And me and my crew were infamous back then. We were the party crew.

We had a crew of about six of us boys that lived above Adair's. And we loved to

goof on people that were coming over after the bars shut down for the first time. We would stand on this corner and do this skit we rehearsed – We always had a stranger to the club house with us, so that the joke was even funnier.

It went something like this, “Adair, you see that bar ‘o adair. We goin ‘o adair. Adair, we didn’t say we were going into Adair. Adair, boy’s I think he’s calling us alcoholics. Hold on dare boys. We goin ‘o adair, not in adair. What’s wrong with you. Hold it right adair. Now don’t you see that window just above Adair? Dat dare is where we going. We going ‘o adair.”

It was silly, I will admit, but we used to get ourselves dying of laughter. Oh the good old days. Miss my youth, this was a great place to be me in those days.

Chapter 17

All you Need is LOVE

Pt.1

Quazzi, I want to open this Apocalypse up a little more. Let’s release The scroll of Rosa de Blanco, and Rosa de Rojas.

You’re the king, KING.

It was Easter weekend 2017. We were off to church. Upon arriving there CAIN discovered the hidden message of scroll Rosa de Blanco, and scroll Rosa de Rojas.

The assignment of the Apocalypse and the two boys’ from the beginning of time

had always been to stop war and fighting. The leader of the four directions of Love was sent to help.

I would LOVE to help.

We kind of knew you'd say that LOVE. But we don't want to send you, LOVE. We want you to stay here.

But I have some LOVELY ideas. LOVE is all they need. I would LOVE to take some helpers. LOVE is the only way to get the LOVE LIGHT on, maybe they just don't know how to LOVE. LOVE is the only way to stop all the unlovely fighting. Please let me go. I'd LOVE to.

Love, we don't want to send you down there.

But – I'd LOVE to help. I have three lovely helpers that would also LOVE to go. What could possibly go wrong? All they need is LOVE. What could possibly go wrong?

Well, you might fall in love with the place.

How could I?

Yeah, how could you? Right?

I would never do that, I LOVE it here too much. Let me take my three helpers, and we will be right back.

Be right back, where have I heard this before. Listen LOVE – if you don't come back we will make your life a living

disaster by sending the Master of Disaster down there to get you.

That sound like a LOVELY idea.

I knew you would say that.

So the decision was made to send the 4 directions of LOVE down to prison Earth to help stop all the wars and fighting. But as the God's feared the 4 directions of love LOVED each other too much to ever get away from each other.

To fix this TOTH sent down the Master of Disaster to break the four directions apart, and get them to come back home to Heaven. However, the Master of Disaster upon his arrival to the LOVE family, although an outcast, got the love sickness upon his arrival with LOVE.

The mission had always been to save LOVE, but TOTH had to get the Master of Disaster to do it. Once they found the Master of Disaster, they would find the leader of the 4 Directions of LOVE.

See, I knew he was going to get stuck doing his job since he LOVES doing his job so much. I knew we shouldn't have sent LOVE, but he was right – only LOVE can stop all the fighting.

We sent the Master of Disaster back with the Apocalypse weapon to destroy the place, so that LOVE can't come back. The end goal is to get LOVE back into Heaven, and never let LOVE out of HEAVEN ever again. LOVE has been gone too long.

This was the revelation of scroll Rosa de Blanco and Rosa de Rojas. What CAIN didn't know is that it was my Dad who is the leader of the 4 directions of LOVE. As

we sat in church that Easter Sunday, CAIN – Jesus Christ, the Lord of LOVE sat next to the leader of the 4 directions of LOVE. CAIN couldn't help but be humbled. CAIN'S original idea was to destroy all of this just to hide his shame. But since April of last year and his first time walking and being a human his opinion had come full circle – CAIN no longer wanted to destroy the Earth, but rather wanted to make something greater for all its inhabitants. Return Earth to its former glory and namesake as the Garden of Eden.

The Apocalypse Weapon being with me was actually a last chance way to rescue "LOVE", and return "LOVE" back into "HEAVEN".

MIKEL, The BANK'S are probably not going to let us through HEAVEN'S gate, but MIKEL – I am the KING of KING'S. We

will use another gate, and it’s not far from here. In fact it’s here in Dallas – they don’t call this “the Big D” for nothing. Let’s go, I know you’ll like this.

Chapter 18

Let me tell you about Texas radio and the big BEAT

Pt.1

ABEL and I have been talking about you, and I think you’re ready for this. ABEL has told me all about your life and desires. Let’s go talk to the BIG D.

Well look what the cat’s drug in,
ABEL – TOTH and CAIN, what a surprise.
And you brought some friends along too.

SILVA jumped from behind the pack and yelled at the BIG D upon arrival.

CALL ME A CUNT -

BBBBBAAAAAMMMMM

And Silva hit the Big D in the face with her shield immediately upon seeing the BIG DEVIL – Big D. She hit him with so much force the shield lost its logo. The symbol of the two headed eagle, and owl with three legs known as WHO-DON.

Silva, listen to me. I’m sorry. I never knew that was going to affect you so badly. I’m terribly sorry. I would never do that again. I would’ve never said that to you if I knew what it would do to us. Do this to our creations. I promise. Please forgive me.

Do you mean it?

Yes I do –

And Silva laid the biggest kiss on the DEVIL – the big D as he's known.

EEEEWWWWWWWEEEEE get some!!!

Go Big D.

Boy's. Boy's. Behave. I wasn't expecting that, Silva, I mean Ester.

You can call me anything you like – you big tough guy.

And she smooched him again.

Silva, I would've come sooner to tell you I'm sorry – but I have to watch the gate. I can't leave my post. You know how important this job is. I'm sorry I couldn't have apologized sooner.

All's forgiven now Big Guy. Give me another kiss.

Why are ya'll here? How are you here? How did you get here?

That would be because of him. Big D, this is MIKEL – he's probably the only person still alive that wants to go to hell.

What?

Yeah, you got a prisoner named Watson. Dexter Watson. He molested MIKEL'S

daughter, and he wants to kick his ass. BAD. I mean RRREEEAAALLL bad. Bad enough he doesn't live right, bad enough.

That's right. I've been to heaven, fuck that place – no Dexter Watson there. I want to go to hell. I gotta score to settle. Know the man?

Yes I do.

Move over and take me to him.

OK. Surely – I can't do anything to this guy. He seems to like everything I throw at him.

Maybe MIKEL could teach you something, Big D.

He wants to go to hell that bad.

He’s rejected staying in heaven just for this moment.

That place is for sissies. All white and perfect. No booze. No smoke. And no possible revenge on Dexter. He hurt my kid, Big D. Ruined my family and life. If you don’t take me, I will take me.

Damn, this guys for serious. Let’s go. I’m all in. We betting on this one?

You bet we are.

They took me to a tree in an alley at Skillman and Abrams Blvd. Immediately I was sucked into another vortex. This vortex took me to HELL. Souls that are cursed to HELL, become our trees. HELL was everything they say it is, the smell

of blood and fecal matter permeated the air. Screams of agony abounded.

QQQUUUEEEIIITTT – I commanded.

Dexter, we got a score to settle.

When I got there, Dexter recognized me right away – he was tied up with fish hooks all through him. He was blood red from all the beatings he had taken from the Sand Man and Big D. He was not pretty to look at in Life and much worse to look at now, but his stupid smile remained the same.

I’ve come to settle the score with you Dexter.

MIKEL, how good to see you. I knew you wouldn’t make it into heaven.

Bitch I didn’t want to go to heaven just for this moment. I’m gonna kick your ass Dexter, and since we are dead – I’m gonna kick your ass forever.

Oh, I can’t wait, MIKE. I’ve been expecting this for a very long time.

You’ve been what? No. no. no.

You know what – fuck this. My forgiveness to you made you kill yourself the first time, Dexter. Your suicide got you here. Kicking your ass is what you want, is that what you said? I’m not here to make you happy. I’m not here to make you happy at all. Screw that.

I got a better idea.

I’m going to forgive you again. And I will carve my mark on you so that you can remember this forgiveness forever.

I took out my knife and carved my initials on his tree in the alley of the shopping mall at Skillman and Abrams, MN.

Dexter I forgive you a second time for destroying my family and my life. I forgive you for what you did to Shaolin. Know that I leave this mark, not to shame you; but to remind you – I marched into HELL, just to say, Dexter Watson – you are forgiven by me MIKEL, again.

All right boys - D – we out.

Whut was that?

That’s not what we brought you here for MIKEL. You -

That weren’t no fight MIKEL. We got money on this. Lots of money on this. There ain’t no winner MIKEL. We have to burn the spoils if there ain’t no winner!!!

Free will bitches. I got free will. That’s how I’m settling this score. Again. Ya’ll will just have to forgive me.

I’m sorry to waste your time Big D. I really am. I meant to kick his ass. I wanted to kick his ass.

I’ve lived with this chip on my shoulder all my life, just to kick his ass.

But when I got here and saw how much he thinks he loves it here; I couldn’t make him another moment happier. So I said screw it. Forgiving him for what he did to my daughter took me years to believe. I had to lie to myself everyday

for months. It caused his suicide. If it was that affective in life, it'll have the same results in this after life.

Let's go. I'm done here. See you real soon Dexter, I'm the new boss around here when this shit I'm going through gets finished. Big D needs a break.

_____ Pt.2

Later that night I sat drinking many beer's with the Big D, CAIN, Quazzi, Who- Don, ESTER and ABEL. None of us could stop laughing.

What the heck is so funny ABEL?

MIKEL, we're warriors. We don't **forgive**. We are attackers, defenders, punishers, or executioners. That's all we are. That's all we've ever been. We're just a bit

surprised that somebody actually believes that forgiveness stuff.

Can you “**be leaf**” this shit!!! He didn’t kick his ass. MIKEL!!! Couldn’t you have, I don’t know, **dis-timbered** the mfr, maybe possibly **broken a limb** or something. We took you to HELL – MIKEL, no-one usually ever comes back from HELL without a scar, or bill of bad health or something. It’s never happened before.

MIKEL, we were expecting blood and mud. He even gave you a mandrake – and what’s he do – throws it in the dumpster in a plastic bag so it never gets released. MIKEL!!!! YOU screwed up **our** fun.

I know what the **ROOT** of the problem is - we were **BARK**ing up the **wrong tree**

with this guy. – ABEL continued to make jokes

“I’ve never seen forgiveness in action before – I’ve never seen the act of forgiveness used like that before”, said CAIN, “I’m impressed at how effective forgiveness truly is.”

You gotta understand something MIKEL. We created the Bible, we didn’t “learn” from the Bible. DO AS I SAY – NOT AS WE ALWAYS DO.

Until now, just like most of the humans, we thought that stuff was a bunch of crap. We’re warriors, MIKEL. We don’t practice forgiveness. We killers, MIKEL. Doesn’t the word **REAPER CREW** mean anything to you?
Doesn’t that ring your bell a little. We are
REAPERS, MIKEL, REAPERS. We kill things.

IT’S A SPIRITUAL BATTLE, MIKEL, that means it’s a WAR – MIKEL. No such thing as forgiveness in a war.

I think DON should say something.

Much respect is all I have to say. Respect earned and given by me.

Yeah, we’re laughing because somebody finally taken us serious, MIKEL. We don’t even take us serious, MIKEL. We all just learned something. And we thought we knew everything – said the Big D.

MIKEL, MIKEL, MIKEL – what am I going to do with you? You can’t go to HEAVEN, you don’t like that place. And I can’t put you in HELL, you’re too good for that. What am I supposed to do with you? Where can I put you? I have no place to put you. It’s only heaven and hell, those are your only options. But I can’t give

you either of them. What am I supposed to do? I have no other available options for you, and I'm all out of vampires, demons, and dragons for you to slay, kill or defeat. We can't keep you here, MIKEL, you'll kill everything we created to fight with. You can't sink our battle ship – we can't let you.

Any ideas? Men? DON? You'd be the most wise about something like this, what do you suggest?

Azgaurd. That's the only place a man like MIKEL can go.

Azguard? Do you think it's even possible? Do you think they'd let us give them MIKEL?

With all of the prophecy's he's broken and dethroning LORD EVIL, why wouldn't

they accept him. Just the rumor about MIKEL should get the trick done. And now that this has happened, he's surely got a new title – Grand Master God of New Knowledge. I mean he taught us how to use that "forgiveness" we came up with. I will delegate well for his acceptance.

I am the LORD of FORGIVENESS and I even learned something tonight – CAIN interjected. MIKEL, if DON can get you into Azgaurd, we might be able to get back into Azgaurd ourselves. Azgaurd is what we want. I know you'll be happy there son.

DON, only you could even ask. Are you going to leave us to go and ask, we kind of like having you back DON.

It's what is required. He cannot go to heaven, and he is too good for hell. And

he has taught us all the act and results of forgiveness. I must go and find out.

Be gone, DON, and with speed make your return – ordered CAIN to Don, the owl of divine knowledge that was released from ESTER'S shield earlier in the day at Big D's gate.

Azguard? Wow. Don, do you think you could ask if I could come too. It was my home once too, you know?

I wouldn't push this little brother. None of us have been in Azguard for a very long time. Getting MIKEL there first might be best for all of us. Let DON go and do his thing.

Fellas, I want to go and do something. Let's go back and talk to Dexter.

We went back to HELL – back to the tree that held Dexter’s soul.

- Dexter, I came to do something with you. I came to visit. I know what it’s like to be in jail. I’ve been in jail lots of times, and in all the times I have been in jail, no-one has ever come to visit me. I thought we could sit together, and visit. Thought you might like that. Let’s talk Dexter.

I visited with Dexter for a few hours, I told him about my little girl, Shaolin, because he had asked. I told him about how well she had grown up, how pretty she was and that she ended up looking just like her mother. Told him about fighting fires with Salyer and the USFS, and how that came to its demise. And then I laid down for the nights rest.

- Dexter, I’m going to lay down now. You need the company. You won’t be alone tonight.

A few hours later I woke up and heckled the bastard for three hours.

- I might’ve never been visited in jail, but I’ve also never been heckled, you little shit. I might forgive you, but that don’t mean I have to be nice to you, sucker.

The tree began to weep. The tree shed water all night long in the dry Texas summer’s night.

The next day I went back to the tree that possessed Dexter’s soul.

- Dexter, I thought I'd come back. I feel bad for heckling you. I wanted to eat lunch with you.

I had gone to the store and bought all the things that Dexter loved to eat. Dexter was a junk food junkie. So I bought a bunch of little Debbie cakes, and m&m's (his favorite) I even bought a two liter of soda. I sat there and tortured him with sarcastic heckling.

- Miss this? Do you miss this? Here have some. Hhhheeeellllppppp mmmeeee, help you.
- I can't reach that far, hhheeelllppp mmeeEEEEEE

The tree wept harder.

About this time a Mexican walked up. Quazzi and I could instantly tell this wasn't a Mexican, but another visitor

hiding among us as a Mexican. This was another assassin. The first words out of his mouth to me after courteous salutations were, “Forgive me father.” He bought a round of beer, and we drank and made casual talk.

It was easy for me to know who the spy’s were in Tuscon because they would talk to me. I’m a homeless person. No-one talks to the homeless. I would know. No-one talked to me in Tucson accept other homeless people. Or the spy’s trying to stop THE RECKONING from being finished.

The Awakening had ticked off a lot of Globalist, they’re plans being revealed within the books pages. I don’t care. The attempts on my life at this point crack me up, like I’d miss anything. Your kind steal it all. You steal everything. Every moment of heroism. Every material possession. Every home, every car,

every child and every future. I’m not laying down the events of my past to save my future – just ruin theirs. I have nothing to lose. TAKE OVER THE WORLD? Over my DEAD body.

Literally.

The assassin and I made casual talk and drank our beers. He said he heard me heckle Dexter all night in the empty alley – there was no-one in that alley, that night. I know there wasn’t. This was another shape shifter.

He pulled out his knife to cut my throat, but the knife disappeared. He found it in his pocket and tried again, and it disappeared – again. He went to stab my back, but it disappeared again. No one ever bothered to tell him, it’s thou shalt not kill. I can be killed. But you still here with me. Now what you going to do?

Would you like to use my knife? Mine might work better. I asked him.

No. no. no.

I’m God’s sacrificial lamb, and this is what hurts me about these assassination attempts – you either think you are god, or have so much power that you feel like a god – or you are that unhappy, but too chicken to kill yourself, or you just have a sick curiosity – but either way, you are willing to kill one person to kill everything else and try to start THE APOCALYPSE.

My advice, kill yourself. People like John Candy, Chris Cornell, and Robin Williams had “heaven on Earth”, lots of it.

They had money and fame - but in order to find happiness they each had to

commit suicide or drive themselves to an early death. Every leader in the industrialized world has a weapon that can destroy everything, but it only takes one bullet straight to the dome for those leaders to get you to their victory. Why drag the rest of us down with you? What did the poker chip and the butterfly do to deserve nuclear annihilation from a leader of his people? The ANSWER is **NOTHING**.

When I went to the store to get another round of beers for us, my assassin got on his phone. Quazzi created all languages, and I, included, know Spanish. We knew everything he was saying, but didn't let on that I did. When I came back this is what he said to the person on other end of the phone.

I can't kill him. I have tried. It's not working. He won't die.

Assassins usually get killed if they don’t do their job. R.I.P. fool – it’s though shalt not kill. See you in HELL, MFR.

Pt.3

LOKI, I should kill you –

AKOSHA, wait just a minute , let me say this first, I’m sorry. It was an accident. I got cocky. Thought I could have it all and you weren’t there. I wasn’t trying to mate BB. But it happened. And now all three of you hate me. Who’s this?

Him? That’s MIKEL. He’s the new guy. He’s LORD EVIL KILLIER. He’s the guy that defeated Quazzi.

So this is the human that defeated the undefeatable Quetzalcoatl. I love Quazzi. I'm going to miss him. Can he fight? He'll make a fine mate. I want him.

MIKEL refuses to kill Quazzi. He refused to sacrifice him. Quazzi is still here. He has free will. We have to honor his will to keep Quetzalcoatl alive.

Excellent. He's a great father to his children.
Maybe he can teach you something LOKI.

Hey, wait a minute – don't talk about me like I'm not here. I'll make a fine mate?

Uh, MIKEL, the devils daughters get what they want. Trust me, a guy like you would be more than satisfied.

AKOSHA, did you know they worship a likeness of you here on Earth?

They do?

Yes.

I never hear them pray to me.

They call you Asoka.

The call me a – what. ?

Now AKOSHA, you two are going to have to work things out if our plan to save the relative is ever going to work. CAIN and I did it. I did it with the bitches. PESTY and her sisters did it. I know you and Asoka can do it too.

LOKI – why do you like coffee so much?

Why do I like coffee so much? Why that is easy, it reminds me of you.

Reminds you of me? How?

Well its hot. It’s steamy hot. Is bold. It’s bitter. It can be sweetned. It’s creamy in color, just like you. I’m in a bad mood without it. I work hard to get it, and get some every morning, first thing in the morning. Soon as the aroma hits my nose I’m in a good mood. And when the coffee touches my tongue, as soon as the coffee touches my tongue, I’m in love with everything – and I know it’s gonna be a good day. At least till noon.

Oh that’s why you like it –

Are we still talking about

coffee?

LOKI, that’s over – LOKI, I’ve decided I’m not going to kill you.

Oh, how nice of you, thank you. I was in the middle of this rescue operation, now I can finish it. It would have been a drag to stop with the rescue operation. With the mother ship coming and all. That’s very nice of you,
AKOSHA

LOKI, I’m not killing you because I wouldn’t want the Queen Bee to miss

her chance at doing it. LOKI, I think your gonna make a great Daddy.

Thank you, AKOSHA. What about husband?

Not until she forgives you for ruining her body, and taking so long at getting this victory done with. She is still really mad at you LOKI. But you know how we girls are, we just want results, and you haven't gotten any results yet.

Oh, my goodness, when do you girls ever quit with the nagging? I'm doing the best I can. I had a great kill shot Apocalypse planned. But now it's ruined. All ruined. Now it's a rescue operation. My entire Apocalypse is ruined. I was painting my masterpiece. I was gonna F-them up for good, but now they're on my team. Can't do that now.

Hmmm, that would be problematic.

Yeah, working with “people” I hardly trust since they’ve been killing me for the past 600 Million lifetimes. But it’s either we do this and live to fight another day – or we get crushed by the Mother Ship. They’re about to leave. They are in route as we speak, you can feel it coming. Feel that?

Yes.

The ground slightly trembled.

That’s them coming. I can’t get anyone to listen, poor MIKEL. Everyone calls him crazy for believing what they say about the Bible. As if, the Bible weren’t supposed to actually be taken literal.

We tell the people in charge and they just laugh it off. Complain that MIKEL is making fun of them. It’s frustrating. But we demigods do have an escape plan, but Akosha that doesn’t include your kingdom. We need you two to help us, and get over this thing between you and Asoka. MIKEL deserves the both of you. Don’t start a fight over him. Not even for a second. You two need to work things out. CAIN and I did it, you two can do it as well. Something to consider.

I will think about it LOKI. Nice to see you

love. Love? You still love me?

I was talking to him, The Lord Killer. Your just an “old Love”, LOKI – and I never did love you, your just very cute, and really good in bed.

Don’t remind me, I already regret it. We had fun. We had lots of fun. But I have messed our relationship up beyond repair. I’m sorry, Akosha. I hope when this is over, and BB, and the relative are safe, we can still be friends.

Friends it is, LOKI. Like I said, your gonna make a great Daddy. I just know you are. And if you aren’t, I will kill you, Little General.

Oh, be quiet with that little general stuff, why does everybody pick on my size – I’m still the best there ever was.

Bye, LOKI. Mate –

His name is MIKEL.

Mate, I will see you soon.

(GULP)

– nothing to worry about MIKEL. Nothing to worry about at all. You'll be happier with her and ASOKA, than anything else we could bring you. Trust me.

Pt.4

Let's go, MIKE, I need you. I need you again, carry me.

What's that in front of me, MAYHAM?

That's Jupiter, MIKE.

Jupiter?

Yeah, Jupiter, ever hear of it? What about it? We in spirit, MIKE. We in spirit. Look behind you.

Holy Cow. What’s that, MAYHAM.

That is a very large abyss. That’s everything you love. Everything you love, MIKE. Come on, keep going, I need you. I was running out of breath, that’s why I picked you up. We gotta get past Pluto. We almost there.

Past Pluto?

Yeah buddy, come on now, it ain’t that bad. We got this one baby. We got this one.

What the hell happened MAYHAM?

Well, MIKE, someone finally built a nuclear bomb that could win a war. But they built it too big. The BANKS did it. They couldn’t win at democracy so they destroyed it all. Sore losers.

Can we slow down my hearts racing to fast, I’m gonna die.

You gonna die if we don’t make past Pluto too. What you wanna do MIKE?

Can we at least slow down?

When we pass Saturn, I’ll slow you down. Deal?

Deal, MAYHAM.

Behind me the entire solar system was being eaten by an abyss. MAYHAM’S view was simple, man plans and MAYHAM laughs, before the news gets to GOD.

As you can tell – we saved it, for now. But every generation of global leaders seems to inherit the idea that it’s their turn to destroy the only home we share. The leader can’t win at a diplomatic solution, so they pull the plug on diplomacy, and hit the button. This was the 19th abyss MAYHAM and I have fixed. But this was by far the largest.

We passed Saturn, Neptune, and Uranus, even a few satellites. It was a sight to behold. Your spirit knows no boundaries, is the lesson I have learned over the adventures with

MAYHAM.

How’d this one get so big MAYHAM?

They snuck it on me. They cheated MIKE. But they always cheat, which I don’t mind cause that fact makes it easier to catch them at cheating. RIOT? Don’t worry MIKE, we got this one baby. We got this one baby. We just about there, MIKE. I can take it from here, thanks buddy. Sleep tight MIKEL.

Chapter 19

D E A R G O D

have a confession to make.

Speak NEPTUNE.

MIKEL, I regret to inform you that
99.99% of the humans are extinct.

DEAR GOD.

What? How many are in the .001%

It shames me to say this –

Say it –

1

1?

There is only one human left.

Only one human left? Oh shit. That means, that means…….that means….I'm the only humans left.

ALL THAT WORK for nothing. I wasn't saving anyone at all. I was JUST SAVING MYSELF.

But I don't understand, what about my father, what about my mother? What is my little girl?

How did this happen?

When we arrived, we devised a plan to "terror – form" the planet. We were told that "humans" were food from another

planet and gave themselves willingly. That human's wouldn't work or conform to society. We were told that humans were all drug addicted lazy and alcoholics, not knowing about the RFID program or all the **other facts**.

We were told that "humans" were undesirable from another world, cannibals, that were violent and non-law abiding. Tolerated, not able to be liberated or changed.

So we devised a plan to destroy the remaining humans. We bombarded the soil, water, and air with contaminates called CHEMTRAILS. With the chemtrails we infested the population with Ghouls, causing the population to become more violent and less controllable; in order to apply more force and control over the remaining population.

How did I survive?

Where you worked and lived are the only explanations as to how you could've survived, the idea was fool proof. No-one questions the authority, and they are bound by no justice or law, they have absolute power over the planet.

However, you lived in TAOS New Mexico at a very high elevation. No poison oak or poison ivy grows there. There are no ticks, fleas, or mosquitos there as well. You worked with forest fires, smoke from the fire would have carried the nano particulates away, and once again there would be no fleas, ticks, mosquitos, poison oak or poison ivy since the ground would be burned and charred from the fire.

You don't use sugar or over the counter medicine, and for ten years you ate

nothing but organic food – keeping you away from the genetically modified food that we put in the human food chain. You don't eat sweets.. You only drink water, coffee, or beer. So your water is either filtered, or steeped – which kills the nano particulates in the water. You don't eat junk food. You don't drink soda. All of these products and conventional food are the weapons that we used to accomplish - "**operation rapture**". Death to the human's. I am sorry MIKEL.

Sorry? Oh that's funny. No your sorry I survived, how embarrassing. I'm the new boss, as it is written – consider this my first day on the job.

Gabrielle, I need a blood sacrifice – ONE STRIKE – TWO SONS.

NNNOOOOO.

“No” what? I didn’t see a thing. Gabrielle, if I don’t get my blood sacrifice - you’re going to regret it. Do it now.

You just killed my son’s.

I didn’t see it. I had my back turned. I want to see blood. Gabrielle, ONE STRTIKE TWO DAUGHTER’S. THAT’S AN ORDER.

It’s progress, NEPTUNE, not perfection – you know yourself nothing can be perfect – not even a plan to kill every human on the PLAN – E.T. Am I correct?.

You killed my family.

You killed your family, NEPTUNE. You can make more. See now we have common ground. We’re not that much different than each other. Consider yourself lucky, NEPTUNE, that your CAIN’S friend and

Akosha speaks highly of you. If it weren’t for her I’d have your head NEPTUNE.

Leave me. I have to go grieve. Alone.

I have nothing.

JUST.

LIKE.

ME. NEPTUNE. Can you relate?

Pt.2

I went to the gallows to get out of the public eye. I sat there and drank my **beer, having just received word of the** euthanasia of all the other humans from NEPTUNE.

MIKEL, this was the old gallows during the Civil War.

I KNOW THAT ABEL.

ABEL interjected. GALLOW? GALLOW? There’s no-one there. The line soundS dead.
GALLOW? I think their hung up on me? GALLOW?

ABEL tried to cheer me up –

Not working ABEL. And CAIN. You just have to KNOW what grieving is like don’t you? FINE,
stay. GRANITE MOUNTAIN SHADOW CREW you are dismissed until further notice.

CAIN, this isn’t cool. This isn’t EVEN ok. I do not forgive you for being sneaky all

the time. The next time I tell you to leave, you will leave for good – stop doing that to me.

MIKEL, I just wanted to be with you –

Why, so you could watch me cry? Or find some other more curious habit to destroy me for? Like breathing. CAIN, I went through months of terrifying shit – vortex's, abyss after abyss, the new world order weapon, the invasion with RAMSES. My church turned me away and told me never to return because of you. My family thinks I'm crazy. People think I'm crazy. I FEEL CRAZY. And my own daughter is afraid of me.

I'm alone. I'm all alone. And now it's more than just a "feeling" I have – it's proven. This is bull shit CAIN. Your dad had your mom. What do I got? Nothing.

About this time one of the towns folk came up to me and asked, “Are you lost?”

No, I’m found.

What are you doing here?

I’m minding my own business. What are you doing here? I’m a half mile from anything?

I just came to see what you are doing. If you don’t leave I will have to call police.

Call POLICE?

I’m **on “public property”!** This is my property lady. Or it’s supposed to be. I’m doing nothing wrong. Nothing but crying, you bitch, fuck is your problem? I’m not

bothering you, but you walked a half a mile to bother me? What is wrong with you?

You're not going to make it to the phone to call police, bitch. Get out of here, before I knock you out. I've had enough of "YOUR KIND" – get away from me the way I wish I could get away from "YOUR KIND".

You see, CAIN. I can't live like this. They all hate me. It's on an instinctual level. That bitch just turned off her television, put on her shoes, walked out the door, crossed over a fence, and walked through a half mile of waste high grass to tell me she's calling the police because I am "bothering her".

They just killed **all of my planet** – and I "bother them". I'm soooo sorry, that I bother "their kind" – fuck man. I'm just

sitting here crying. I'm on public property. This is my land. I'm just wondering WHY DID I EVER SAVE THIS WORLD FOR "**their kind"**. I feel like a fool.

ABEL!! This is your fault. Can you believe that lady? CAIN, you expect me to "live" here? In a place like this – all alone? ATOM had your mother, what do I have? NOTHING. NOT EVEN A MATE. I just get to live on Earth, alone – all alone- with dip shits like that bitch. Walk a half a mile to fuck with someone that's doing nothing. I can't do this**. I can't even live on my own planet. 99.99% occupied territory – where do I go to not "bother" – their kind?**

Where can I go to get some peace I'm tired of bothering "them".

At 99.99% - nowhere – that's where.

Pt.3

Holy shit – they fucked up my book – look at that shit – its all wrong – its all fn wrong. They messed with the spine, they messed with the dedications – those were my friends – those were the five people I knew personally on that crew. I went to school with two of them Eric Marsh was my teacher. He was the Captain of that crew, I put him at the top of the list – why did they do that.

Oh these fuckers. Fuck them. I'm sick of this,
ABEL. I am so sick of **you two**. You do realize, I have been – let me see, they have tried to kill me – how many times now? Seven, eight. I'm not even counting anymore – I've lost count.

Then there's the molesting and being hooded and beaten and **NOW THIS**. Disrespect my friends from Granite Mountain? AGAIN. Damn, man, we can't even DIE for them correctly. Their

disrespect to us is endless. Do you know how many times they disrespected the Granite Mountain Hot Shots? 5 times now 6 times. This is crap.

“Where do you go when you die?” I wish they’d die come back and tell me. Cause I don’t care. What the fuck do I care, I’ll be dead. What difference does it make? Your gonna laugh and disrespect me anyways. Fuck man.

That’s my book.

Trying to make me look like a fool. Stupid mfrs.
Look at that. Right there they disrespected **Obama**. Right here they disrespected the almighty y one, Infinite **LOVE**, no-one has ever channeled him – I know I gave credit to you ABEL, but you and I both know that was HIM, the big HIM. The biggest HIM, Bigger than H.I.M

– the big big him. LOVE they disrespected LOVE. Fuck is their problem? Why did they do that? They won’t let me work. Won’t let me have a house. Won’t let me have a tent. Won’t let me have a bath. Won’t let me have a dog. Won’t let me have a back pack. Won’t let me have hot food. Won’t let me have coffee. Won’t let me have a family. Won’t let me have some peace and quiet. I can’t even grieve the loss of an entire planet of humans without “bothering” ONE OF THEM. Man I can’t live like this.

I’m pissed. First the genocide and the bitch that leaves her house to tell me she’s calling police – NOW THIS SHIT. That’s my book. That’s my money. That’s my job. And they disrespect my friends that died – TO PROTECT A STUPID HOUSE.

I can build a house – I can't build 19 men of honor. CAN YOU?

You cannot even be one man of honor. How would you build nineteen men with honor, if you can't be one?

CAIN, these are your "people." This is your fault – fix it.

Pt.4

MIKEL, it's AKOSHA – come join me in the water.

AKOSHA, is that you? Is that really you?

Yes it is. I want to mate you. Come into the water MIKEL.

And a hand came out of the water. I could see Asoka just beneath the water. Her hair. Her eyes. Her body.

AKOSHA the water is too wet. I want to go back to the abandoned house like last night.

The house?

You don’t remember?

It must’ve been ASOKA.

We will meet at the house.

I was sleeping at an abandoned house not far from the river's edge. I knew from the eyes of the mystic that this was not AKOSHA. And my mate never ask questions.

Now that we're here can we mate?

Gabrielle - one strike two twins. I want them split from Jim and IVY.

AKOSHA had been with me the entire time. I could tell by the hand of Asoka. The two are never far from me when they are close to me, and Asoka is the touchy feely one. AKOSHA is the loud one. She does all the talking and decision making for the three of us.

Gabrielle made his strike. The twins were released. ASOKA spoke up.

Gabrielle one strike two twins – aim for the throats. Judgment is Vanish them. Their time is done.

Mess with our mate. I never liked the two of you.

Sister, your turn.

ASOKA struck the twins first and fast. You don’t mess around with destiny. Or better said - Destiny don’t mess around with you.

Did they scare you mate?

Not as much as you two, just kidding, not at all. Shame about the twins. But now Jim and Ivy are free. Free from the

“twins of evils”. It had to be done. We have to get through the gate.

Jim, your set free now. You owe us redemption and gratitude. Do we have your vote to cross the gate? Don’t answer that yet. Let it be a surprise to me.

Anyone else want to mess with my mate IVY?

I’m glad your back AKOSHA, I wanted to show you more about this place. The management and authority have this organization called W.H.O. – the world “health” organization.

Oh do they? WHO? That’s funny. What do they do? Does WHO know about this?

Well, I don’t know what they do, but I do know that a member of this WORLD HEALTH ORGANIZTION, said,“ FOOD DICTATES
BEHAVIOR, and we make no apologize for that.” So I thought I’d show you something they call food. CREAM as a matter of fact. I have some right here.

I reached into my pocket and pulled out a cream from this morning’s coffee that I got at the gas station. Just an average cream, in a plastic container, that holds a shot of – so called cream. I handed the shot of cream to
AKOSHA.

They call this cream, but I can assure you, no cows were bothered in the manufacturing of this cream.

She took the cream and tasted it, - hmm. They call this cream? If ISIS tasted

this, she would flip – this is not cream. You intend to raise ISIS and give her this as cream. You intend to raise ISIS and kill ISIS don't they? I need to talk to this WORLD HEALTH ORGANIZATION. **NOW**
-

World Health Organization, "FOOD dictates behavior, and we make no apologize for that". Did you make a claim like this, did you say this?

Yes. Yes we did. How did you?

I ask the questions.

I know what your problem is – ME.

Hold on sister, let me toy with them first. W.H.O. - You're going to apologize for that statement, yes you will. I will make

sure of it. This is the type of cream you intend to serve ISIS after you raise her? That would be rather funny, watching her destroy you, but I'd rather do it - for her.

"You see this?" AKOSHA reached into the garbage can nearby and pulled out a halfeaten hamburger. She took a bite.

"You call this "BEEF". That's not "beef". That's not even cow. What is this? I already know what it is. That's the public, isn't it? Don't lie to me, that wouldn't be very unhealthy for you. You serve **the public** in Happy little Meals to children, and then report to us that the humans are cannibals, do you not? I know that you do. That's a false hood. You're forcing the humans to eat – human, or "**the public**" – as you call them. You're the world health organization, how would you not know this? You're in charge. This is your claim,

is it not? Just like you call this cream? Am I correct?

These “PUBLIC” are your creations, your kind created “the public”, how could you do this to them? Why do you do this to them? You intend to take over the world, don’t you? And kill ISIS upon her rebirth, don’t you? I hear God is dead. You want to bet?

NOW Eat.

But it’s fingers.

Torture dictates behavior and I won’t apologize for that. So. EAT. You’re going to eat this before you apologize – “food dictates behavior” and I am making sure of that. I want your behavior to “the public” t to be modified, just like your food – EAT.

So you think its ok to “eat” public children. I know to you they are very old, and that they grow young, as the humans grow old. But to me, they are children. You think this is okay to eat your creations after you molest and make your sick movies with them? You thought we would never find out? Let me guess, you thought you would kill us upon arrival?

Your Foolishness will only be temporary.

YOU WILL APOLOGIZE WHEN I GET THROUGH WITH YOU. If I ever get through with you.

Mate, we will see you later. I have fools to embarrass for now. The world will be a better place when and if I get done with, - W.H.O. are you again?

What do you do? I didn’t tell you to answer yet
–

What do you do – besides –

Piss me off?

When my sister and I get done with you, you will apologize. Like I said, torture dictates behavior, and we enjoy and make no apologies for that. Sound familiar? Do you know what the difference between a WOMANIZER and a HUMANIZER is?

A humanizer – NEVER MET ME.

Asoka, will you assist?

Certainly, sister.

Mate?

I’m too busy – but tell me about it later, girls.

Chapter 20

UNDER THE BRIDGE

Pt.1

CAIN came to me, MIKEL remember when
ABEL told you that death can tickle when it’s all said and done? MIKEL, I think you deserve a good laugh. You have allowed all of us to enjoy laughter. And I wanted to show my appreciation, give you a good laugh.

MIKEL, you are aware that we all EVOLVE. At one time MIKEL, all we had was fun. “Fun” evolved into “funny”; and “funny” into “not funny”. There was much we didn’t know about you when we first met you humans. Laughing was considered and insult. We were very hard on humans, and society, to even get you this far from where you came.

We used to kill people with laughter, MIKEL.
This accidentally created the spirit of laughter, the TRIXSTER spirit. He helps people cross over. But, MIKEL, this is a test to see if we can cross the heaven’s gate you created. You have to break the TRIXSTER, MIKEL.

Trixster’s job is important, but I have never allowed him to be a soul, CAIN said to me - it’s time for he and you to spend some time together, MIKEL. Being a soul for a first time might help him, MIKEL.

MIKEL, Trixster – Trixster, MIKEL.

Have a good time MIKEL, you need to laugh a little.

- this is what I can remember from the rest of the night. Just as in the case of

CAIN, B.B., TORRO, WHO-DON, QUAZZI , and the SISTERS OF LIGHT, I felt overcome with another personality. This one couldn’t stop laughing,

constantly cracking jokes. These are some of the jokes I can remember, and as much of the rest of that event that as best as I can remember.

DOES THE WORLD HEALTH ORGANIZATION, do they regulate that coffee stuff, what’s that? – I don’t see a

coffee bean in there. I don't even know what that is? Poor Juan Valdez, picking all those beans, handpicked by Juan Valdez – I feel sorry for his ass, and him too. Getting that ass of his up those hills with all those beans.

Who threw the tomatoes at Jesus? Who threw the tomatoes at Jesus? Come on tell me…who threw the tomatoes at Jesus. I know it wasn't Juan Valdez, he works too hard. Too bad they won't hire anyJUAN else. Water we still doing here MIKEL?

Horseman? That ain't horse man, man. Man if that were a horse man, man; he'd be half a man and 2/3 of a horse - man. He'd have hair all over his body. Well more hair than that, is all I'm saying.

He’d have four cloven hooves, those are two bare feet. He does not have four cloven hooves, that ain’t no horseman – man. Oh man.

No, that ain’t no horse man - man. Oh horseshit man, that ain’t no horse men, either man, if it were a horse men, man, there’d be more than one – the word men is “plural” that means more than one. I know right.

Beverly Hill’s, ooohhhhhh, him? Well I guess nowhere now. I heard he was just about to break it big in the book world. What a shame, 1/10 of his earnings would’ve stopped this from happening. He predicted this too. What a visionary.

No, that is definitely not a horseman, man. Not even a horsemen, man. Well

how would I know how many horsemen there are I don't read that horseshit….man.

Man, that is definitely NOT a lamb. I know a lamb when I see it and that is definitely NOT a LAMB. You should think about going on the lamb, though what are you drinking – share with me, I want some.

Well that is not a prophet – he has no money – there's no profit in that. HOWEVER, if they killed him to make some money – that would be a false prophet…….

But I only want ONE MORE ARMEGEDION.
JUST ONE MORE….PLEEEEEEEAAAASSSSSEE

But I really really want just one more – just one mmmmmooooorrrrrrrereeee ARMEGEDION.

I said please.

But mine was gonna be better than his, better than the last one. His was just a stupid hippy song – I HATE HIPPY'S That's why ((~));= I can't stand hippy's – I'm not supposed to. They're weird.

My Armageddon was gonna be big. I mean real big – I was gonna have flying bats with ball's and lasers, and OUT FIELDS with dreams, and relief pitches of beer, and seventh inning stretches, and safes.

But I don't like hippy songs.

Did you really think my last Armageddon, was my bestest one ever? Really? You mean it? – Yeah me too. I guess it truly was the last big war after all.

Do you know which Jerry Garcia song I like best? Yeah me neither. They all sound the same.

It really was a good Armageddon then wasn't it? That's nice isn't it, that it's over. I can be happy again? Do I have to get along with them hippies? That would be strange – look at 'em, don't they look strange to you? No. Just me? That's nice.

You know what I like about Wal-Mart? Me neither. But they do make their dog food 'Ol
Roy in AMERICA- only thing in that store MADE IN AMERICA ACCEPT THE EMPLOYEE'S – that's nice isn't it? I mean why would they let CHINA make dog

food? Look how they treat their dogs. Course it’s really NOT all their fault. What else you gonna eat that sits on command? That’d be like hunting COWS, if they still had any cows.

Speaking of cows. How long till these stupid humans figure out that if we ate cow the way “they” say we eat cow – the cow would have been extinct years ago. What is in that cow, beef stuff anyways? How do I know that’s cow - that’s chopped COW – say’s beef, cows are supposed to say NOT MEEEEEEE, Please. We call chicken, chicken. Fish, fish. But cow is beef? And Pig, PORK. What’s a beef? What’s a pork? - NEVERMIND. Damn these humans are too stupid. Come on MIKEL – water we still doing here?

MIKEL. Water we still doing here? Don’t you wanna go now? Aren’t you sick of how stupid you are? Aren’t you tired of

being poor cold and wet? I know I am, or I would be if I were you?

Organic banana? Please, why do you need an organic banana? Don’t you throw the peel away, MIKEL? How poisonous is that poison? And how do they get poor JUAN Valdez up that tree with his big lazy ass? OH WAIT A MINUTE, they don’t.

Juan is the loneliest number two bad there aren’t three…..three could get the job all done before the many number of idiots to get things done.

Sum JUAN help MIKEL. There can only be JUAN, MIKEL. Let’s go, MIKEL. I’m just doing my job. WATER WE STILL DOING MIKEL?
Don’t hold on. Don’t talk to strangers, MIKEL. No Juan stranger than me, MIKEL. Don’t hold on to what they got, doesn’t really matter if you made it or not.

– MIKEL, WATER WE STILL DOING HERE?

And he would laugh, all night long.

I could see where CAIN and ABEL were going with this. Maybe it was time for me to go. I was the sacrificial lamb, and leaving Shaolin my daughter behind again, leaving so the end could be nearer for the both of us sounded like a good idea.

I was tired of the label sacrificial lamb. Just wanted to get out from that lable. It had caused so much trouble for me in Tucson. I was tired of the battle's to kill me and try to start the Apocalypse – after three years of this, I was fed up, and ready to cash it in.

I never wanted to hurt my daughter's feelings. But somehow I had. I had traveled 2000 miles to hear my daughter admit that her mother had told her not to talk to me anymore. Leaving me

heartbroken again, I also just didn’t care anymore.

I didn’t come up here to west virgina from Arizona for a fight I just wanted to visit with my daughter for an afternoon. I wanted a three hour visit, got twenty minutes spread out over a week, tying me up as per usual.

I wanted three hours and I got fifteen minutes. Seemed unfair. I even dedicated her mother in the first book, never heard a thank you.

I laughed all night long from the wise cracks the Trixster spirit would say.

He laughed in a weird way that reminded me of the woody wood pecker cartoon. His laugh had a creepy ending, every time the same.

I had spent plenty of time with the devils daughter’s fixing the 31 abyss’s that the ACCESS of EVIL had created to prevent us from getting into Heaven’s Gate back in Lewisburg, West Virginia . AKOSHA and ASOKA and I would free fall to the bottom of the abyss, and together we would pull up the bottom and replace the path to HEAVEN’S GATE. A million year free fall. We spent the time in duel’s, training me how to fight the both of them with all their many styles of fighting.

I had been handpicked by AKOSHA to be a mate, but love is something AKOSHA has never felt. She being the Spirit Of DESTINY – the ANGEL of DEATH.

AKOSHA made homes for the innocent. Her sister, ASOKA my other mate, is FATE. She fight’s blind folded and hands down justice swiftly – to the guilty.

They had all three come to help me cross over – but in being my soul instead of my spirit; this way the twins could FEEL what I was feeling when we humans are going thru this thing called dying.

The two of them couldn’t take seeing me in so much grief over leaving my daughter behind. But after two nights of talking to me about giving up this body and joining them back at our home – which was a home the two of them created for me. (An entire planet with suns and moons that sit in the sky with amazing colors that we do not have here on Earth.)

I convinced them now wasn’t the time to go that it would hurt my daughter deeply. And I didn’t want to hurt her more we need to talk and I need to be here to talk to her.

I wasn’t going to leave my daughter like this; I could not cross over now. I had to break the Trixster instead. You can’t kill what’s dead. I would see the two them when this was better, saving the world and relative was over. Also I couldn’t leave Shaolin with this kind of good bye.

They had sat and loved on me while the Trixster cut wise cracks and made me laugh. For two nights and days.

So this is dying? I thought before the girls changed their mind, NOT BAD. I laughed for two days straight. Kind of cool.

ASOKA is the quiet one. I love the quiet ones. AKOSHA is the diplomat of the two. She negotiates the most. FATE moves swiftly and AKOSHA likes to torture. Together the three of us, while sleeping in Lewisburg West Virginia, we spent the sleeping hours clearing the

gate to heaven from having 31 abyss's that were blocking our path.

AKOSHA called off the Trixster once I was absolutely ready to go, the way she felt about stealing me for her own purpose didn't settle well with her; but she admired my bravery to still try to stay behind and stop the Apocalypse. Save the world and universe, just for my little girl.

AKOSHA thought to herself:

The world was very lucky to have a girl like that on their planet, with a daddy like that.

Pt.2

I can't do this to him.

He loves his

daughter too much.

--- Pt.3

What about you Trixster? You're crying for the first time. These are tears, said CAIN upon his return.

I've never cried before, this is what it's like for them; this is how hard it is for them to say good bye????? I have never felt so terrible, so much loss. LOVE is that important to them, why do we steal them from love. I can't do this to him. I should've never challenged a LORD KILLER. I feel so terrible.

Those are tears Trixster, CAIN advised

I wanted to share with you Trixster, we just never knew, I wanted to share knowledge with you Trixster. MIKEL is my son, just like Elisha and Enoch. He will show you what they go through. They leave loved ones and unfinished business behind, Trixster. We never

knew, forgiveness starts with yourself first, Trixster. And that can take time.

Trixster, I owe you redemption too. What you did for the humans was important. I just wanted you to see what they go through.

When we get our business done, I have redemption to serve to you for your loyal service to the humans.

Thank you KING., Trixster said with his very first set of tears in his eyes.

Chapter 21

9-11 is a JOKE

Why the hell do these fuckers keep trying to kill me, CAIN? What's the deal? Am I the only one that's happy here? Am

I the only one that wants to save this place? Do they want to prove religion is real, or not real?

I mean. I’m not HAPPY happy, just want to keep it around for Shaolin. What’s the fn deal? Do they think they are God? I’m GOD’S sacrificial lamb. Not theirs. I can’t even kill myself. Why do they keep trying this murder business?

I can’t – is my summer – I mean the rest of my LIFE going to be like this? People constantly trying to kill me so everyone else can die and go somewhere else but me? This sucks.

They won’t pay me for my book. Steal everything I own. Now this? Constant murder attempts from dimension jumping shit bags that – what – want to kill everything cause they think they are GOD? Want to win a WAR? By killing everything ever – as in ever ever? Wth?

I don’t get this. Do they WANT an Apocalypse? I know they do. But WHY? Doesn’t everything die in an Apocalypse – why do they want to kill everything? I mean this hurts getting shot all the time. I’m getting tired of it. I was nervous back in Dallas.

I don’t know what to do. I’m trying to save this place for my kid, but – shit this is annoying me. I mean really fucking annoying me – I don’t mind the poison LSD darts but too many and and it’s not fun tripping all the time having these shit constantly doseing me. I like tripping but NOT THIS MUCH – Jesus man, oh sorry – what are they doing? WHY?

I’m tired of LSD darts and I thought I’d never even suggest this to myself. I didn’t know LSD darts existed. Why can’t I have some personal LSD darts – what gives? I wouldn’t normally take this

much LSD. Or admit that I am tired of rat poison and LSD. Not to myself.

CAIN, help me?

Remember before we left Tucson? I can’t even drink my coffee in peace without snipers blowing my head off. The blood stain on the park bench kept getting bigger and bigger and bigger?

Is that my blood?

Yes it is.

Man this sucks. I’m leaving -

Yes I do MIKEL. Yes I do. ABEL and I have been capitalizing on this a little. We’ve been taking you back home and fixing you – ya know for the big day. And well -

CAIN, a little? What the Hell is littler than the relative? What the hell is littler than that?

MIKEL, I have a confession. We have been secretly killing your kind to make us a big home - back home for a very long – well, second or two, relatively speaking. But for many years your time. I mean HUGE. REAL HUGE. I mean REALLY REALLY HUGE. We like things HUGE so we can all get along, ya know. NO?

Mikel, what year was it in 1776? Funny thing is they don’t even know what year it was in 1776. They didn’t have clocks that matched in NY
City till the train was built coast to coast – so let me ask what year was it in 1776? Answer, they don’t know.

But, MIKEL, We like things big, ya know. BIG.
REAL BIG. And well, every other Christmas

one kingdom or another blows the shit out of you with a nuclear bomb – however, this is because I have been lied to. I thought this place was terrible. But **Now,** I realize, it's not. Existence is awesome. And I'm tired of keeping you here – I want to take you there instead. You deserve the best home every created.

And well – do you remember (-!!) 9. 11/? Well funny story, that was another nuclear bomb. Half a dozen of them really. And WELL MIKEL – I know this might sound strange – but I was trying to KILL you son, that I love now – sorry about that.

Remember building 6. The picture slightly proves that – well, now that I'm

here and have walked and talked and drank coffee and – well walked – and uh – smoked – you're really not that bad after all MIKEL. I like you MIKEL, and all the other dare I say "people" that are here – trying to kill you. I don't want to killed after all. But listen, I understand this is no fun, getting killed all the time. So I gotta run an errand I will be right back – I promise I will be right back.

WIT RIGHT HERE, BE back in five minutes I swear.

Jesus Christ ABEL, is he fn serious about 9 -11?

Yeah. That's what we are trying to fix MIKEL. DAT TYPE OF SHIOT.

Chapter 22

ROUND AND ROUND

Pt.1

MIKEL, we have a tiny little problem. You see,
UH – I DON'T KNOW QUIET HOW TO EXPLAIN THIS, but I sent 5 million nuclear weapons down here, and I didn't know how big a number 5 million was –

You call that a tiny problem?

Well it is to me. I've never been this small before. And because – well, since I have never counted this small before – I didn't know how big a "5 million" was. I've never counted this small before. And – uh – MIKEL – I can't stop them. But if you forgive me – I might be able to do something.

What? Say this again.

We don’t have time for that right now MIKEL. But - Yeah, I’m sorry, MIKEL. I’m real sorry. But, MIKEL, hurry up and forgive me cause they will be here in about ten seconds.

Why did you do that?

Well, funny thing, MIKEL, you see ABEL kept saying “WE CAN’T MAKE this any smaller – CAIN”. But who listens to the general, you know – especially when he’s your annoying little brother that got you into this mess, and you’re the KING of Kings. And you KNOW everything. You know what I mean? I mean, what does he know? I know everything, or so I thought. Know I’m talking about?

No, I don’t.

MIKEL, PLEASE FORGIVE ME. AND HURRY UP – THEY'LL BE HERE ANY SECOND –

I thought you said they'd be here in ten seconds?

I did.

It took you 30 seconds to say that.

It did? Well, I've never used a second before, I don't know how long a second takes. Come on man – MIKEL, they are on their way. Hurry – just forgive me. Just forgive me, pleeease, and I can fix this. I can fix this, I know I can. I promise I will never do this again. I will never try to destroy this galaxy EVER again. I promise. Have faith in me, MIKEL.

That’s what got me into this mess, J.C., having faith in you, CAIN. NOW THIS? You need “my” forgiveness? To stop “5 million” nuclear bombs? What about the Meth thing? Don’t want any forgiveness for that? We just gonna skip that one for now?

MIKEL, please hurry. This is super important. Do we have to talk about that now?

No. I wanna talk about it now.

Really, they’re on their way here now. Is this a good time for this, cause I don’t want to lose this place. I don’t. Not now. I didn’t realize how incredible this place was till – well just a few seconds ago – did I say that right?

No. No you didn’t.

Oh, man. MIKEL – please. You're not making this easy. And please hurry. Please forgive me.

O.K. Fine. I forgive you. Jesus CHRRRIISSTT. Man ya'll are pathetic. "Can't make it any smaller?" Now I've heard everything.

Oh, thank you, MIKEL. I promise you, YOU won't regret this. I promise I won't destroy you ever again. Thank you, MIKEL. Thank you. Be right back.

Thanks. Be as gone as you like, CAIN.

I'll be back shortly, sorry ABEL, didn't mean anything by that –

CAIN. You're in a hurry aren't you?

Oh yeah. Thanks for the forgiveness, MIKEL. Be right back.

Thanks for the warning, CAIN.

MIKEL, I kept getting out voted 1-3 to save this place. Keep the relative from getting this small. Nobody else in our circles would vote because of our “punishment”, and it being ALL MY FAULT. Coming here to see what existence was like was all my idea.

That’s why the “13” is an unlucky number, MIKEL. I couldn’t get the others that were involved to vote. So therefore the relative kept getting smaller and smaller. As you well know, it was a 4-9 vote that got us down here – all of us. It was my idea that got us into this mess.

I was the one that, dare I say – “cheated” to win the election by creating

“friends” that would side with me. And I haven’t been able to get them to help me ever since. Everybody is very mad at me still. But we are fixing that. Well if he makes it in time.

He was very serious about the missiles, MIKEL. But, MIKEL, CAIN is the best. He is the best of the best. He can fix things quickly. He’s a very noble KING of Kings, MIKEL. You did the right thing. Trust in CAIN. That’s my Big Brother. He can do anything.

Jesus ya’ll are nuts. LORD HELP US.

Pt.2

MIKEL, I found the solution. Follow me PLEASE. I have something I want to show

you. I have something I want you to have. Forever.

MIKEL, I know you have been busting your ass to save this planet from devastation for your daughter, and that’s very noble of you. But I want to show you something. I think you will be surprised and amazed.

MIKEL, if we break the Ying Yang symbol, we no longer chase the After Llife. But we can chase the after death, cause there’s just more once lived over there that either miss you, or never met you at all. Many lifetimes ago – there were no humans.

Your life kills our death. Spirits never die MIKEL, or ever get this small. We are about to share your kind to our kind in a, very long time, but we are only half way there. We need your help to get there.

-Yeah, MIKEL, follow us – said Sarah – You see MIKEL, man plans and god laughs doesn't he? Well what do you think happens when aliens plan? We laugh silly. And I don't like their plan, so come with me let's see if I can make you change your mind about this "sacrifice", cause I think your perfect for this type of JOB. I know a guy as cute as you are would like to see what we have hidden over here……here….here, here and here – not to mention all that over there, that's not really as classy as a guy like yourself. But it is there, if and when you need it, did I, mention I live over there? No, well I do sweetie.

Over here you can see the Ying Yang of the
Universe. As you can tell, SARRAH added, the Ying Yang is still very much active, and very much real. And very much going in circles, and boreing as hell. Well you know what I'm trying to say – don't you?

We need your help, MIKEL. We want you to break it. We heard you know a dentist? Is he any good, did he make good grades, how would you know? You trust him? Really? How well do you trust him? How do you know he can be trusted? Is he cute?

You want me to do what?

Break it. You know – BREAK - IT – MIKEL, we were thinking since all those bombs are on their way anyways – and we're so tired of putting you back together. That instead you'd just let us drop a bunch of bombs on you instead. Like 500 million cubed times three times five many more times. Does this make any since?

NO.

Good. I like that answer. Don't ask me why. But the ancient symbol of peace

and balanced harmony bull shit thing isn’t going to break easily – unless of course you agree with us. What do you have to lose besides those shoes? Come on MIKEL, you need some better shoes. Adidas? That’s so old school.

What’s wrong with my shoes?

Nothing. Listen. You’re good at breaking things, aren’t you? You break wind. You break records for assassination attempts. Let’s just add a few half dozen million cubed more? Deal? That’s what we were thinking too.

CAIN?

You break ribs laughing too much. You broke Trixster. And if you break my daughters heart ever again, I will kill you, if I could? Because you’re so

damned cute – MIKEL. Am I too old for you? Or is it that my daughter is just right for you? Never mind. Follow me over here.

Do you see that?

Holy me- o – my, what is that?

That is the “After Death”. The Ying Yang is reasonably only responsible for the AFTER LIFE, but what about the other parts of creation? Well, MIKEL, that’s why we have this. This is where all the fun stuff is, if you ask me. And I would know. I put it there.

The “After Life”, MIKEL, is for the human’s and the management. – said CAIN. But, MIKEL, long before the humans were ever created, there were

millions of other existences that existed in the AFTER DEATH.

ABEL told you about our grandfathers the GOD of LIFE and the GOD of DEATH. Before LIFE as we know it, there were no human's.

Humans were GOD'S last creation, sorta. Man second to last with woman being the very last, sorta. But before that, there were millions of other civilizations that came here after their time in LIFE – this is the AFTER DEATH.

But – J.C. - It's soooo big J.C. It's fn huge. Why do they keep us from this? HOLY COW. This is bigger than that beach shit thing – fn a man!!!!

I understand, but as you can see, we have a little problem down there. That

white dot in the middle of all that darkness; that is SMOKEY – Infinite Love. We have to get him from all that darkness, back over to the Light.

We were thinking MIKEL, since you know of a dentist you might be able to get said dentist to help us. – Sarah added.

Help us what?

BREAK IT. MMIIKKEELL aren't you listening? We're going to – break - the Ying Yang symbol of balance peace and harmony. I'm ready for the wedding MIKEL, I want lots of grandkids too.

Do what?

Too soon? Moving on.

MIKEL, listen, please listen to me. I want you to – BREAK it. THE. ANCIENT. YING - YANG. THING. MIKEL, are you listening do we have to write this down again? Have you missed everything you see before you? Don’t you see the little Ying Yang symbol down there– poor SMOKEY, carrying the relative this entire time.

The ancient symbol of balance?

Well what other Ying Yang symbol of balance peace and harmony would we be talking about, MIKEL?

MIKEL? Is there a new Ying Yang symbol of balance peace and harmony that an old girl like me doesn’t know about ?– CAIN, help me out.

Yes, MIKEL. We intend to destroy the balance of life with your fathers help. But we figured you should ask him.

UH – J.C. – what happens to everything if we do this?

Well, relatively speaking, it would all be destroyed.

And if it’s destroyed, then we would be in Heaven, correct?

Correct.

Everyone?

Everyone.

Even George Lucas?

Even George Lucas, MIKEL. I promise.

So all I have to do is get my Dad to destroy –

Your Dad get's to destroy "absolute evil." The darkness with the white eye. You see, MIKEL, long before the system in place became what it is – the law was very simple. "Eye for an Eye". "Tooth for a Tooth". And when we were visiting with your Dad, he admitted to knowing that "little trick" he learned in college.

The trick where he crossed his wife's eye for a date. SARRAH and I were thinking, that if we took a dentist down to Grand Pa, we could – FIX HIS TOOTH. And there would be no more Absolute Evil in the

world seeking life to take to the After Life.

Absolute Evil, MIKEL, only cares about eating life to take it to the After Life. It constantly looks for life to kill, in order to create more AFTER LIFE. The Afterlife produces oil. This will release the oil tycoons from there dark side in this white mass over here on Earth. They will take care of them selves', once they find the MOTHER LOAD. We've told them "don't hit your mother" but we know their greed. And how well they listen, am I correct?

We are at critical mass, MIKEL, and there aren't any more LIFE'S to feed the AFTER LIFE. The AFTER LIFE needs to go on a diet,
MIKEL. So we can get over to the After Death.

There is no death after death after death – the way there is in the After Life. You

only death one time, and Nazareth gave you life after Death. Soooooooo this is what you are looking at – the after death.

This is your solution to the nukes that are –

Were

On their way?

Yes.

This is what they have been keeping us from, seeking perfection? Man. This is huge. Real huge. Much much bigger than that. Why do they keep us going in circles?

Because they’re on top driving the machine, and calling the shots. It’ s hard to explain - but let’s just say it’s the will to survive that drives them, and they need oil to drive their will to survive.

As you can see, MIKEL, that Ying Yang is down there, and we are up here. We need to create a “pivot valve”. Now that the zodiac has broken we can we can create the pivot so that this valve can assist us. But we need to swap the white and dark dot before we can do what we want to do.

We have to get SMOKE back over to the white side of the symbol. He is INFINITE LOVE, and he’s out of teeth.

Once we get Grand Pa Evil to switch directions, because he can see again, with his old dark dot eye, we will create the imbalance and this will get Smokey

back to us. We owe SMOKEY the most redemption, MIKEL. He is infinite love, and he is TOTH'S GOD. He is the MGM GRAND, MIKEL. The one you channeled in the book that was taken out. That was infinite love.

The most high.

WE owe it to SMOKEY - MIKEL,

In order to create the imbalance, we want you to get your father to visit us, down here in the afterlife, and as you can see – Grand Pa only has "ONE" tooth. This is from ages after ages and ages of Tooth for a Tooth. It'll be an easy fix. Once we fix his tooth, Grand Pa will look for new food somewhere else.

That's the plan MIKEL, can you do it?

WELL, if I can’t save the world for my daughter, then I will destroy the Universe for the girl I love the most. Cause she would meet me in heaven, is that correct? I mean I’m dead right, and I get everything I want in heaven, is that correct?

That would be correct, MIKEL, since you would technically be in Heaven, so yes MIKEL, the girl that you love will be there - since everything else is destroyed and in heaven with you.

DEAL.

I’ll do it. There’s only one girl I have ever loved to the point she takes my breath away. I was in love with her for three years before I met my daughter’s mother. Never said a word to her, because I couldn’t. But maybe since I’m dead I will learn how to. We got lots of time correct? And even though I loved having a family, now that that’s gone – I

want to find her again. And if I’m taking us into Heaven, she better met me there, CAIN. She better meet me there. Her name is Gabriella.

We were hoping you’d say that. We were hoping you would say that.

I wanna cry – I’m SO HAPPY – he chose my daughter again. OH I LOVE YOU, MIKEL. MIKEL, I think you need something. Can you reach my birth control pills? Way up there?

Up there? NO.

Good. Good. Excellent. That’s exactly why I put them waaaay up there. WAAAY way UP THERE. Lots of grand baby’s, MIKEL. I want lots of grandkids, MIKEL. Lots – do you understand me? Or should

we write this down – again. CAIN, help me with this guy.

Pt.3

So Dad –

Where am I?

Well, we are in the “AFTER LIFE”.

Am I dead?

No. Not yet. But since we’re here, let’s talk. Do you remember telling me about that “little trick” you learned back in

Dental School? About hitting a “certain nerve” and “crossing the eyes”?

Yeah.

O.k. good, we need you to “FIX” a little problem that we have – you know that big pile of trash

in the Pacific Ocean called the “great garbage reef”?

No.

That’s o.k. because I will explain it to you. You see, experts claim that trash has drifted into a large island between Hawaii and California. It’s the size of the Texas purchase – the original Texas purchase, Dad. But this isn’t true.

The great garbage reef is the “AFTER LIFE”, eating its way through LIFE. It’s one reality that’s about to eat through into another reality - this reality, our reality. Once the AFTER LIFE breaks through, there will be no more LIFE. Because there is no “AFTER-AFTER LIFE”. It’s come to an end, and we need you to help us fix this one tiny problem. OH, and hit that nerve at the same time. Think you can do it?

UH…..

Here take a look.

What - what is that?

That, DAD, is the very first species. Named “grand pa”. That is absolute evil. That – I mean grand pa, eats everything in its path. It’s what been at odds with

LIFE on our planet from the start. Its purpose, if you will, is to eat LIFE. But look, DAD, this should be easy for you. See…..take a look.

What DAD saw was a black stomach with one lonely tooth, and one white light coal miner type light for an eye, constantly eating away at the darkness before it.

Before humans, DAD, LIFE didn't look like we do today. This is the grandfather of the "AFTER LIFE". One of a kind.

Dad, what if I told you that you are looking at the eye of the black part of the yin yang symbol of balance? And we need you to do that "little trick" you learned at Dental School to – help grandfather "find his glasses" – do you know what I'm trying to say without saying it?

Just tell him we want him to break the ancient symbol of absolute evil MIKEL, gee whiz. – be honest. - SARAH said.

Sarah, I got this. If you look right here DAD, I think you can kind of see where we are going with this.

Absolute evil was nothing more than a mouth with **one** sharp tooth and a miner's light. Before the battle between good and absolute evil began, grandfather evil's mouth was nothing but sharp knives. He had a mouth like a shark, full of sharp knives. But in time, with the LAW of the land being EYE FOR AN EYE, TOOTH FOR A TOOTH, grandfather evils teeth were reduced to one lonely tooth.

I think I see where we are going with this. He has a sore tooth, Dad, and needs a dentist – to fix it.

-I see. I’m on it.

Grand Pa, we brought someone here

to fix your teeth…..

(ssssssshhhhhhhhhh) Whuts that?

WE CAME TO FIX YOUR SORE TEETH!!!!! GRAND PA!!!!!!!!! (winks at my dad.)

Bout time. My teeth are killing ya’ll.

Stop killing LIFE for second, and let the good doctor take a look at all those sharp nasty teeth you have (wink, wink)

Being a professional, my father knew exactly what to do. And he went right for the nerve first. And just like that the white miner light that was on grand pa

evils head crossed over to the other side, with no problem at all.

Wow, I’m surprised that worked out – said Sarah. Good to see someone learned something at school. MIKEL, why can’t you fix small problems like your father – oh that’s right, you fix the big ones like stopping the destruction of the planet, well never mind. Your Dad’s kind of cute, looks just like you, too bad he’s not as young as you are? Would he be into a girl that’s seven infinities young?

He’s happily married.

Well what a shame. Does she have to find out? I’m not looking for a long term commitment – just a very cute dentist who can keep a secret.

Dad – the tooth, you gotta pull the tooth.

In grand pa's mouth - absolute evils mouth, was one lonely tooth, an easy fix for professional like my father. He grabbed hold of it, yanked, and it came right out.

I can see, by the looks of it that grand pa evil once had a mouth full of these – teeth. Where did they all go? - asked my father.

Oh, we sold them on T.V. You ever hear of the Ginsue Knife? They were quiet popular back in the 80's. We sold them by the millions. Made a mint.

Well, that's done, Dad. You just saved the world from destruction, Dad. How's it feel rookie? Like I said trash island wasn't trash that sank, Dad. It was absolute evil punching its way through into our reality. If grand pa evil had punched through – all life would've been

destroyed. Dad you saved the world. Be proud of yourself.

What's next.

Well, Dad, he gets to eat me – I'm the sacrificial lamb of the Apocalypse –

How's he gonna?

(SSSSSSHHHHHHHH- he's not – he's

just gonna try. ***wink, wink) This is

gross.

Won't take long, Dad. Grand Pa Evil chewed and chewed and chewed, but finally gave up. Since his eye sight was repaired from the trick
Dad learned back in Dental School, instead of going in circles – like a million

times before, Grand Pa evil chose a new direction with the help of his old assistant TOTH.

This way Grand Pa –

What's that –

I said

I FOUND SOMETHING TO EAT!!!

GOOD, that kids a little tough around the hedges.

Well, Dad, you always ask me where will you go when you die. This is where you go when you die? Wanna stay?

I think I like it better with Terry.

Who? That wife that’s between us. The one that is “in our way”? I can fix that, for ya, ya know?

SARRAH.

MOM!!!!

Should I leave? I should leave. Bye.

Thank you SARRAH.

All right Dad as you wish. We will send you back to the living – but don’t ever ask me again where will I go when I die, I don’t die – I death, and I get right back up. The blood of Jesus of Nazareth gave me that potion. Die is a lie.
Chose death, and get up.

This is where you go when you die – so quit asking me to answer you. You got your answer. Thanks for saving the planet, but as you can tell I'm a little busy saving realty and the Universe right now for Shaolin. So hate to break this short to you – but you got to go. Love you Dad. BYE NOW.

Terry I just had the strangest dream.

Chapter 23

Straight to HELL BOY

Pt.1

TICK TOCK – you are here by relieved of command. Thank you for your service.

TICK TOCK. Dismissed. Enjoy the time off, sir.

MIKEL, this is ARZRAEL, AZRAEL – MIKEL. MIKEL, we gotta do this little thing – it’s just a formality, so follow AZZY.

Damn, ABEL, what’s this place?

This is the stable’s, MIKEL. This is the stable’s. This is where we keep the horses MIKEL.

Who’s that one?

That’s MEGADEATH – that’s D-MAN’S horse.
This one is BUTTERCUP – belongs to PESTO. He loves buttercup’s that dragon Queen so he named his pony after buttercups. This is my horse. I call her KISS’S.

But MIKEL, this is the onne we really wanted you to see. You need a job, am I correct?

I thought we weren't gonna –

Yeah, about that MIKEL – we still ain't figured that out yet, so as I said before this is just a formality. I don't want you to just sit in a box – you need a job, don't you? I know you do. So – follow me, please.

Why is this horse way over here?

Uh, well, she don't get along weeellllll let's talk about that later. This horse is named WILDFIRE. And she was a tremendous looking horse. All flames. The most amazing horse I had ever seen. Red Yellow Orange main of fire, flame around her feet BLUE EYE'S and

when she saw me – she ran up and kissed me.

UH, BOSS. This is strange, idn't?

Why, AZRAEL – (ah – hem) why yes it is. Yes it is?

What's so strange?

Well MIKEL, uh wildfire here has – uh KILLED the last four horsemen that rode her, that's what's so strange.

Getting Chilly in here, BOSS.

Why yes it is AZRAEL, why yes it is. This has never happened before – she really loves you MIKEL. I mean she really loves

you. MIKEL, WILD FIRE don’t love anybody – ever.

First time for everything – BOSS. First time for everything. I need a coat and a sandwich. Be right back.

Get my coat too MAY – I mean AZRAEL. And make my sandwich a double, may – I mean AZRAEL.

Yis sir re, BOSS. Yes sir re, BOSS. Yippee. I knew he was the one.

What’s that mean?

Can’t tell you everything, MIKEL. Demz de rulez. You know the rulez. MIKEL, this is what I can tell you, she loves you.

That’s all I can say at the moment cause I’m lost for words myself.
Sorry MIKEL. I wish I understood MYSELF. She hates everything - but you apparently. Like I said she has killed the last four horsemen that rode her. But she really likes you -

She’s so beautiful. And friendly. I wanna ride her.

Well, uh, - maybe later, cause that’s our nuclear option, if you know what I’m trying to say. She really does seem to like you though.

Something finally does.

Pt.2

MIKEL, the KING OF Kings softly said to me, I know that you have these desires to take me to a gate far, far away, in Eritrea. And although this gate is probably one of the greatest to get the job done, and you are owed the money, I know you want to give the banks all summer to start paying the bets and end your pain and poverty, because we have our problems with the banks at the moment. And this desire is very noble of you to treat me like a KING, I do see the genuine best from you MIKEL. But MIKEL, the BANKS may never pay you, I designed them to be unfair.

It’s more complicated now because of the wars and punishment for war in times of peace, for us considering the banks. Let’s NOT depend on them. Not at this time. Now is the time to get through a gate.

But, MIKEL, what if I told you we don’t even need the gate in Ethiopia, or Ohio, or Hawaii – We don’t even need that

gate in Guatemala, or even New Mexico; we can make one - right here.

MIKEL, yes those are GATES that would help us, but we don't need those gates, because I'm going to show YOU how to make a gate. You are made in the image of a GOD. I am demigod, so this will be easy for you. Are you ready? Say after me, IN MY NEED, heaven gate be created– clap if you want to. I blow my wills into inception; like blowing a kiss.

That's all I have to do?

That's all you have to do. MIKEL, that's how we did everything. Even darkness MIKEL was spoken into existence.

We don't need a HEAVEN'S GATE, we can make a heaven's gate on our own.

So CAIN and I created a GATE and me and the gang went into the gate. There its done.

Just like that - J.C.?

Just like that? CAIN said. MIKEL, you are special to me. WE are on a special mission. So I intend to show you special things about yourself while you in turn show me special thing about this NATION of the United States. Special things about your home. Sound like a deal?

Yeah.

OK. Let’s walk together in this gate. Our gate MIKEL has to be hidden so we will not put anything around it. We won’t need to find it again I assure you that. It’ll be better this way.

This should be fun MIKEL. We also have another democratically union we have to meet before we can go thru this gate MIKEL, so this should be fun.

Pt.3

The first to arrive through the gate that CAIN showed me how to make was ABEL'S mother to be, the Queen Bee, otherwise known as Beelzebub – but always called B.B. by ABEL.

B. B.'s proper name is and was EDEN. Before that she was also known as Elizabeth. After she became the first female high priestess she became known as Beelzebub. Her royal title is the Queen Bee, her kingdom is the flying insect kingdom of all types.

B.B. hadn’t been back to the planet since the banishment of Quazzi Coatl, which was when the Garden’s name had officially changed from the Garden of Eden to Prison 555 – or planet Earth. A long time ago this had been her domain. Eden, like ABEL, was a volunteer into banishment. ABEL had sworn to me if she hadn’t had left, this place and all of troubles would’ve been fixed by now. ABEL didn’t want her to leave or volunteer for banishment – but he also could not stop her.

CAIN, or as I had started calling him J.C., had just taught me how to create my first gate. We were being denied access to heaven’s gate, so in order to get to the gate we wanted we had to take another route through the Zodiac Council. Each member of the Zodiac would be at our beckon for negotiations that would garner itself into a future vote to let us pass – or not. Each member of the Zodiac was at our

disposal for a night of delegation. Aries was the first to approach us, and she and ABEL had unfinished business with B.B.’s future child birth. This was their first meeting in a very long time.

Eden, or B.B., as ABEL was fond of calling her, was pregnant with ABEL’S first children; her type did not have one child at a birth. Her type had multiple children. Until Dallas, AKOSHA had been ABEL’S mate. B.B. was a forbidden love for ABEL. She had been one of his students, and he – or they; had gone too far in their relations and a pregnancy occurred quite by accident.

None of this changed ABEL’S feelings – not just for the Queen Bee, but for their future children. Scared, yes, but up for the challenge of fatherhood that ABEL had expressed to EDEN back in Lewisburg after the discovery of the human’s destruction.

No matter what happens B.B., I totally intend to be around for our children. I will not run away from this, EDEN, please believe me. – ABEL told B.B. the last time they talked in Lewisburg

.

The first word's out of the Queen Bee's mouth were, "I'm still mad at you LOKI, but I am here. Let's take a look at the place. Show me what you got, cause I know it's not like it was."

Behind the small store in Huttonsville where we had stopped for the night there was a small creek. And just as CAIN and Quazzi had also never been physical before, this was the Queen Bee's first time ever having a sense of sight and feeling as a human. This was also her first time hearing as a human does. "What are that in the air?"

“That is the sound of song bird’s signing of your entrance, Queen. Nice wouldn’t you agree?” Quazzi said to the Queen.

It is very pleasant. And this excitement I have?

That is wind. You can feel the wind that carries the pollen because of the flesh the humans have. Even TOTH himself enjoyed the sensation of wind upon his skin.

TOTH has been here already?

Yes, he has your highness.

And he didn’t destroy the two of you? Say’s a lot about TOTH. Hearing these songbirds is magnificent. I love all the color’s the eyes of the human catch. So

many colors. I love these eyes. You can see everything.

That’s one of the traits I love about the humans too. I mean there are so many, but the colors are one of my favorites. So I was thinking, B.B. – since MIKEL is the only one left; that we could stop the eating of humans.

I will make up my own mind, LOKI. First I’d like to hear what his Majesty of KINGS has to say.

Fair enough – CAIN…

Queen, let me show you instead. And J.C. walked slowly up a hill. CAIN looked at B.B. in the eyes and looked away and took a few more silent steps. Looked her in the eyes again, and cracked a small

smile – but said nothing for a few more steps. CAIN is a king of few words.

But when he spoke he speaks in abundance.
“B.B., I like this now. In fact, I LOVE this now. And this one, MIKEL – TAUGHT ME, and taught me how to love the humans as much as I do. They are my children.”
And that’s all the KING OF Kings said as he walked and smiled at the Queen Bee.

EDEN cracked her first smile.

MIKEL has some honey, B.B., would you like him to share some with you?

They still make honey? I would love to have some honey.
PPPPLLLEEEAAAASSSEEE. I
love honey. Is it royal honey? Oh, I hope it’s royal honey!!!

B.B. it’s just honey, but it’s not refined honey.
But – it is chuck honey, so it’s the good stuff. Nice and gritty the way you like it, EDEN. The honey came from a local bee farmer, so it has the local pollen in it. Here in West Virginia they still farm. A lot.

No matter, I’m just please this place still makes honey, I’ve heard so many terrible things about this place.

After eating he honey sandwich we went down to the babbling creek barefooted. Eden had never felt the ground under foot, or water streaming by. We walked slowly as she was not used to gravity or not being able to fly from falling. I could tell the mood of the Queen Bee was happy from the news of CAIN’S change of heart about the destruction of her once happy garden of EDEN and the humans.

B.B. saw potential, that's all that mattered. She and I built standing formation of balanced rocks together for an entire hour, she wasn't used to using her hands and confessed to me she could do this with her mind, but she also admitted this was also equally as fun. She loved to build with balancing rocks. And we didn't stop until the entire creek bed was full of dozens of them. It turned into a beautiful site when we were done.

ABEL, you know my time here is almost done, and my father is next. I think I should stay while he is here, because of the history between you two, and our current state of affairs being what they are with our future children. I wouldn't want him to have to kill you alone.

I was hoping you'd say something like that Eden, I don't want to die alone.

That's not what I mean, LOKI. But I want to hear what you have to say to him before I leave. This mess between the

two of us, and this place still being a prison is all your fault,
ABEL.

My fault? How could this be all my fault when CAIN clearly….

LOKI, please, I don’t want to hear you right now. CAIN is the KING of KINGS, mind you – and you are ONLY his little General.

Of BOTH army’s!!!

LOKI…..that still hasn’t SOLVED the problem, now has it? I still want to be here when Dad shows up, I can’t let him kill you before I hear you apologize. I’m still mad at you, little General. You better think about that.

There you go with the little General stuff again. B.B. hear me out. I didn't mean for what happened between us to happen. And I didn't mean to get you pregnant. I thought I could make you like me, that's all. But, EDEN, I wouldn't change a thing. Not anything.

Anything?

Well, I'd change the fact that you hate me. EDEN even if you don't love me, or feel for me the way I feel for you – I still want to be in our children's lives. I'll be a good Dad, I promise. I promise I will.

I'm sorry I got you pregnant B.B., and it did take a very long time to get you here; but hey - I got you here, and the place isn't totally destroyed……yet. That's gotta count for something, B.B.

Queeny, I know I messed up, but I promise I will be a good father. I will be there as much as I am allowed to be there for our kids; I will. I'm not going to run from this "thing", as you call it, between us.

MIKEL taught me how to be a very good Dad with his daughter. MIKEL taught me how to do your best to be in the children's lives, and do your best to spoil them while you're there. MIKEL, is a very good father; at least he was until the divorce.

Divorce? We don't have that option in our Kingdom, LOKI. We just cut off your head. In your case both of them.

I know. I know. I'm still not afraid. I'd be a good
Dad even without that silly rule. B.B. you have to forget about my past with AKOSHA and ASOKA. That's over. My feelings for you are nothing like the

feelings I had for them. I will be good to you I promise.

And then a bold voice said, “That’s all I wanted to hear from you, ABEL. I just don’t want my little Queen Bee hurt, little General.

How long have you been here, TORO?

Long enough to hear what I wanted to hear the most. ABEL, I’m going to come right out and with it – this planet belongs to my daughter. Do you promise to give this planet back to her?

Well hold on, we still have lots of other people that have to vote on this matter. I don’t run this democracy. But I will do my best to influence all of the voters in this direction. And let our democracy speak for itself. That is the way we do things back home, and what we are

trying here. So I have to let the Democracy take its course. But, yes, if we get the necessary votes, this planet should definitely go back to its rightful Heir after the “prison” is shut down and set free.

TORO, this is MIKEL, we found out MIKEL is the last human. We discovered this from NEPTUNE back in Lewisburg. We can’t eat the last human, and he has no mate. I want to add to this that we can’t eat the cross breed’s and half breed’s either. We have to stop eating all humanoids – all together.

If this prison is released, you have to promise me that you will help me stop the eating of humanoids. If I can get this from you, TORO, you can be assured that this will help me free up negotiations for the return of this kingdom over to Queen Bee.

If you don’t help me, TORO, I have to waste extra time doubling my efforts to stop the destruction of the humanoids, before I can get to the important stuff like getting this kingdom back together. So, do we have a deal?

We ourselves have to evolve beyond seeing the creatures as something to eat and being considered insignificant. And I know you would be the most influential in this situation,
TORRO. If you helped change other people’s mind because the humans have not been eating herbivores for a very long time now.

But listen, TORO, we had to develop a brain from slime, that’s was no easy task, TORO. The human’s needed the protein to do this. I chose fish remember?

Once we finally decide to arrive here, we can show the population how to replicate protein without hurting or killing herbivores from your kingdom.

Is that a promise?

Consider it – it is. Not just a promise, but a duty and oath to our compromise – if we put down our fight between us to get this prison back to Kingdom status and back to its rightful owner.

ABEL, you and I have most definitely had our battles, but there was once a time when you and your brothers and I used to get along. Do you remember?

The circus? Do I remember? We created the circus. Those were the day's trying to get the love light on with fun and

playing. Oh the good ‘ol circus days. Those are the day’s I miss most.

Hehehehehehehh, so you remember our circus?

You switched sides TORO! That is not my fault.

I switched sides? ABEL, you were defiant to an order; I’d say you were the one that was out of line. You didn’t follow a command from the KING of King’s.

I just didn’t want this place destroyed. TORO, you’ve added as much Value to this place as any of the three of us knuckle heads. Quazzi, CAIN, and I.

I don’t want to give it up or lose it. This place is perfect……sorta. In a messed up kind of way. And in this

moment now, I think the stance against destruction was worth all my efforts.

You should've sided with me from the start. You know I'm a bad ass at WAR. At least you do now. TORRO, I was saving the place for your daughter. And I will add this – if it weren't for our fighting, we would've never learned the art of diplomatic resolutions.

What happened to us, TORO, you and me – changed me greatly. None of what we are doing, or what I have done would've been remotely possible without any of the regret I felt from losing a good friend and teacher like you TORRO.

TORO, you are the one that turned me into a politician. I'm still a good General, but all of this diplomacy comes from you and CAIN. CAIN, is by far the best, but I try to copy his style. So don't think for a second that my diplomacy gives you a

shot at a forceful take over. I’m trying to save what’s left, not destroy the place.

Are you giving me credit for your political ability’s?

No, well – yes, I’m a good politician because I have been at this for two millennia. But it was the wars with you that turned me away from
WAR as the final answer. Fighting you hurt me.
That’s when I discovered there has to be another way. Losing you as a friend TORO, hurt me. I’m sorry for all the fighting but now that you are here, don’t you think this place is still worth saving?

For my daughter’s legacy and children, yes. As for you, ABEL, just remember I will be watching you. Closely too.

TORRO, I just want to make room for our kids. I love it that Eden is the mother of my children, I wouldn't change a thing – but……

And then B.B., the Queen Bee, stopped ABEL by gently placing her finger on his lips and saying, "sssssssshhhhhhhh".

This is an ability that only a wife can have over a husband, and in this case a still to be decided future husband.

> I just stood up for the King and the week, ABEL.

Yeah but even you have to admit the market you help create runs like a slave camp worldwide. It's a dishonor to have to look at.

O.k. ABEL, you have my vote. You just be good to my little girl and we will never **have another problem – you hope.**

Pt.4

Uncle when were you going to say “HI”.

Oh, was it that obvious I am here.

Well, all the bugs are politely biting MIKEL, UNCLE. We knew someone was here. And it could only be you. Don’t worry. After CAIN and Quazzi got here, MIKEL is pretty used to the world around him treating him different. It was the bugs that gave you up, UNCLE TOTH. Look at them. They’re all over MIKEL. It could only be you.

- And they were. I was literally surrounded and covered with bugs. All of them biting me – gently, as if to be kissing me. Butterfly's, ant's, whatever that is….all over me. By the numbers there must've been almost a hundred bugs on me. I was covered with bugs.

So this is skin. Amazing. What's that sensation that caresses my, my – arms?

That's the wind, Uncle. Mom's creation. The way it works is with the release of pressure from the sky. As the temperature drops, the pressure falls, and the release of pressure creates "wind" from the fall. The wind moves the hairs on the arms, the arms have "nerves" connected to the hairs and skin under the skins surface. And we can FEEL the sensation form the excitement of the nerves by the hair being moved.

The skin and nerves also help register hot and cold temperatures, since the humans are warm blooded – unlike the rest of us back home.

So this is what SKIN is like. I like it. I'm so used to my exo-skeleton. I have never felt the wind.
It's nice. I have never had this sensation. Pleasant, it is. I like these eyes too. So many color's. So different. And that sky -

That's BLUE – also mom's creation, in honor of the kingdom back home. TOTH what you are experiencing is called "discovery". UNCLE TOTH, if you're here – does that mean that brother and I are in trouble?

You are always in trouble, LOKI – the two of you, especially you LOKI. But I came to see with MIKEL'S eye's what we can

do to help. No. You're not in trouble with me. Your dad wanted me to come and visit with you two knuckle heads. I'm too proud of you two for finally getting along. We thought you two would never get yourselves together. I am proud of you.

Learning not to fight, to end a fight, can be the hardest lesson to learn, LOKI - CAIN. A very hard lesson to learn. Not one that can be taught, but must be gone through – together. Hard to do, it can be. No one wins a fight, fighting. But your father and I couldn't teach you that. NOT YOU TWO. And especially you Quazzi – teach you not to fight – that would be a job – teach you anything. I'm excited to see you little Quetzalcoatl.

UNCLE, can we show you something. We never forgot you, UNCLE. And we created this language to honor you by. Watch. "T" is a line that goes up, that

represents you – where you went, you went above. The line at the top of the "T" represents the home you promised to find and create for us; now watch – you remember that the "O" represents our home, or the Earth as it's called now. And the "H" is the first letter in the word HEAVEN, which we have stated from the start is our destination. Follow me here. T-O-T-H = Toth, creator of Earth; because you brought us here, this is your creation – TOTH,HEAVEN. So the word TOTH reads Toth, creator of earth, Toth creator of
HEAVEN.

We were thinking of you UNCLE.

I feel so proud of you two. I am honored, I am. Thank you. I came down here cause your dad said it was time, and I heard you two were eating a steak. To imagine CAIN eating meat, my

goodness, we all can change. Let me try some of this STEAK.

You do know what it is don't you?

I know what it is. Boy's you two had to develop a brain – from very humble beginnings mind you. You needed the protein. WE, back home still don't know what to do about the souls caught in the middle of this dilemma, but we will find a solution. I still have yet to try some – let's eat.

Wow. Not bad. I can't believe I'm eating with teeth. They are amazing. I also want to try some of this "coffee" stuff that your Dad was talking about. He truly enjoyed his time with you boys he did.

He did?

Yes, he did. He's your father, he's not going to let you know this – but I will, he loves you two – three – very much. He is proud of what you guys have accomplished – getting along and working together, walking together. And you did it in your own.

"Discovering" diplomacy. ON YOUR OWN, is never easy. But that's how it's done. I can't say who he's proud of most, but that's because he's proud of you all. Your Dad is never going to say this to you three, because he is your father – but he loves you all very very much- And he might not ever say this to you, but he is proud of you. All of you. He never shuts up about you guys. He was very impressed with what he saw when he was here.

I want to tell you something about your Dad, my brother, that I know you don't know. Don't ever tell him I told you this,

but your dad wears boots because he – never learned to tie his shoes.

What? Dad can't tie his shoes? That's why he wears boots?

Dad can't tie his shoes?

You never knew that about your dad, did you? But, yes, your father cannot tie his shoes. We're all – ALL OF US – not that much different.

Boys, to your dad's defense let me add that we didn't have "shoes" back then. And your father's father is the creator supreme – HE speaks everything into existence. With your father, his father couldn't explain things, because explaining things would just create other "problems".

Trying to solve one problem would just create three more problems. And he also had a cussing problem.

GOD DAMN every hear that word?

Boy's - what if I told you, LOKI – I mean ABEL, you're not the only God alive with a cussing problem, would that help you understand how all this got "out of control".

The creator GOD, VAPOR – H.E. – had to leave your dad, helping your father just created more problems. And the problems would grow out of hand till it became what all of this has become.

H.E. had to leave your father alone, and ATOM, be reminded was raising a family with children on his own in a world without civilizations. Let's remember

your father is, and was the first MAN – the head hunter. He looked nothing like the humans do today. I see you got the hair off the back –

Quazzi's addition. It was his idea. That's back when DEMOCRACY worked for us. – FIRST UNANAMUS VOTE. AND STILL THE ONLY
ONE -

Yeah, I bet. Nine boys, all alone, voting, I bet it worked out just fine – How are the LADY'S holding up – They still hate us.

I bet they do. I bet they do, being kidnapped from Venus and all – but in

the end that worked out for them, with Venus being mysteriously destroyed.

What a shame that was, but it saved lives to bring some of the LADY'S down here, did it not. I know secretly they are grateful now, since Venus has been destroyed and no one knows what happened. But resentments will form when you're stolen from happiness. And let's face it; they still don't get treated right – as equals. Not here. Not everywhere.

UNCLE, when DAD showed up we were in Lewisburg, West Virginia, and in Lewisburg they still have the magic fountain.

Oh yeah? They do?

They do. And the cherry trees are still there too.

They are? Man that is impressive.

We took Dad to the fountain to give him some water, some real water – and two ants were dancing at MIKEL'S feet. They were honoring your brother, TOTH. They were going in separate directions in the shape of an infinity 8.

It was an honor to watch. Dad was honored to still be respected like that from your kingdom. TOTH, all the animals know its time. Quazzi's animal kingdom is ready to be saved. The bug kingdom is ready to be saved. They're all sick of being prisoners to this planet and the management. They're all ready to be saved TOTH.

It has been a long time. But boy's, I assure, it has been worth it. I have discovered there is just more to discover. And, even though I get credit

for “making” this place you call Earth now, all I did was discover it. And like I said, I have discovered there is only more to discover. You wouldn’t believe what I have found. And I haven’t even been to all of it. I was too busy trying to find an end. And I found something very special – I don’t even have words to describe what I have found.

Did you find the end?

Boy’s I don’t want to ruin it for you. Not this time. Show me this fire, the fire that saved your lives. The fire that saved everything. I want to build a fire.

I was in Mansfield, West Virginia, at the public park reserved for hikers of the Rails and Trails program that snakes across the state. They had a covered stone gazeebo with a fire place. So

TOTH, creator of Earth and Sky, CAIN, LORD of LIGHT FORGIVENESS and LOVE – (aka JESUS CHRIST, KING OF DARKNESS, THOR the god of destruction), ABEL – (aka LOKI) GENERAL DEATH – and also known as the Prince of Darkness, and Quetzalcoatl – (aka LORD EVIL) KING OF ALL JUNGLES and little ‘ol me, MIKEL, the sacrificial lamb of the apocalypse - all sat down and started a fire. CAIN, Quazzi, and ABEL sat close by as TOTH and I started, stoked and played with the fire.

He’s pretty good at this. Lit it on the first try. Pretty impressive.

Oh, MIKEL’s always been good with fire – he fought fires for a living. He was a fire fighter.

As the fire grew I could sense more was going on. TOTH and I brewed a cup of coffee, and waited patiently for the water to boil. TOTH held my hands – like a father. And when we touched I knew what hadn't been admitted yet. I kept the surprise to myself. I was too proud to come right out and say what I already knew that hadn't been spoken.

TOTH, to be a "conscious entity" – to have
"LIFE" – you have to have FIVE things. FIRE HAS FOUR. Can you name all that's necessary for an entity to be "alive". What does a fire need to be "alive". What's missing from the fire that could keep it "alive"? Can you name them all? I KNOW YOU CAN.", asked ABEL.

Well, first something "alive" must EAT. Anything living must eat. It must GROW. WALK. TALK – and –

What’s the other one, TOTH? Come on TOTH, I know you know what it is – say it – what’s missing from the fire that keeps it from being alive? Say it TOTH. I know you can - say it –

Well, it’s him – points at me – FIRE must have a “consciousness”. The FIRE is missing the consciousness, to be considered “ALIVE”. And he, MIKEL, is the consciousness – or was the consciousness – of FIRE. FIRE is missing its consciousness. That’s why FIRE cannot be alive. OH MIKEL, am I happy to see you.

F-E….the fire elemental. I have missed you the most F.E. You were my greatest creation. The fire elemental – effy. MIKEL, a very long time ago I called you by that name Effy. You were the Fire Elemental that watched over the Jews and Adams family.

I knew that, already. Miss you TOTH.

That’s when the weight of “the surprise” I was waiting for hit me. I knew this to be true on a deep deep level. And I cried. I was with my creator Dad. TOTH. Creator of Heaven, Earth, Fire, and LIGHT.

Our savior.

I laughed and cried. It was the surprise I was waiting for, the admittance. When I met CAIN, he felt like my father, yes he did. A father of my skin. My heavenly father. But this was another father. My first father. My creator Father. The creator of my soul. The father that set me free many many creations ago, from slavery. Slavery at the hands of Moses and their governance.

“Your son has a very old soul”…..were the words of a fortune teller to my mother a very very long time ago. And growing up as MIKEL, this moment was never what I expected in life. Until the books started, I had been desperately trying to do “LIFE” the “RIGHT WAY”. Get a car, get an education, follow the law, find romance, mate, raise my child – be in her life. Die trying to, anyways.

LIFE - The right way, like anyone else.

But it never worked in my favor. Anytime and every time, I was doing what I was supposed to – I was taken down by a parental “JUST US system” that the world put in place to raise me A system, that did not follow their own rules.

The rules and laws, I am told, were there to help me grow into a person that could attain great character, wealth and prosperity – within the boundaries of the law and the rules by getting an

education, job and getting along with others. But I have never gotten along with others. In fact, " the others" hate me. They always let me know it too. "I hate your kind" – I hear this all the time. I ever so politely, just let them say it. Never once have I ever yelled back.

You hate me. I've never done anything to you. But now it all made since. YOUR KIND HATE - "MY KIND" – as you call me, because I don't do everything you order me to do anymore – YOU HATE my LIBERTY. I'm no longer the fire elemental that will fight your battle's and cook your food, clear you're land, part your red sea, feed you manna. The leaders have to do their own killing, or at least create another army to do it for them – I am no longer at their beckon and call.

I have always thought and have discovered that the rulers, and their helpers,– NEVER, never follow their own

rules. So their advice is shit to me. Just as I am SHIT to them, caspice? What works for them is opposite of what I have to follow – to get nowhere.

As it were said to me by an officer arresting me in Eloy Arizona, after I had just blown a 0.00 blood alcohol level – arresting me for drunk driving no less.

He said to me, “it’s not my job to arrest “the guilty” – guilt is for the jury to decide. I arrest who I “suspect” is breaking the law. The trial is where we find out if I did the right thing by the jurys verdict.

Once again – scientific evidence being thrown out and fears and suspicion – just like in SALEM, take command. (0.00 B.A.L.?)

Another type of WITCH HUNT. On that occasion, the police sergeant stuck his service pistol to my daughters head,

saying “I know how to make you break the law, son.” And as I did what any parent would do – protected my child from a gun wielding **BEAST**, his gun grazed my chest – “UUPP, that’s assault. I got you for assault.”

All right, Sergant – I guess you did. Once again the video wasn’t working. Lucky “their kind” have that for our protection, am I correct? Enjoy your heavenly retirement. Cause we will get your kind to see eye for eye, one day soon.
I promise you that. I promise you that.

So even when I’m doing nothing wrong, there will always be a chance that I go to jail. And after finding an RFID chip, and discovering the Pheromone Technology – and after my most recent arrest for crying **tears of joy** at a **public** Library – I can tell, my ex slave masters intend to make sure I pay for TOTH’S decision of freeing me from their commands and

bondage. My old slave master's totally intended from birth and still do to this day, keep me in bondage.

Knowing this about myself, at this moment, released from me a lifetime of resentment against my "JUST-US" overseers. I realized now why "they" – the system and those trapped in this system hate me so much. I was the second slave given emancipation.

First slave ever created. Second slave emancipated, the Jews were the first slaves set free. Every slave master hates emancipated slaves. Forever. Ask the Queen. I guess that's how it is, cause that's how it has felt all my life.

EFFY – can you remember what I told you when I set you free? You and I sat next to the fire, and I told you,I told you, when I come back – you will be a man,

you will be a human. And you, MIKEL, are exactly that. You might not have much, or fit into this world like the rest, but I can see you are a MAN. It is good to see you MIKEL. To me you will always be "EFFY".

MIKEL, calling you Effy is how that tradition of adding "Y" to the end of everyone's name started. They missed you a lot when I set you free. But, you had lost your smile. You just wanted to be like everyone else. You couldn't touch anything. Probably why you can't stop smoking now – it's good to control the smoke. Fire Elementals create smoke all of time. I don't want you to recall too much, but when you lost your smile - H.I.M. told me, "DO SOMETHING."

That's all she said.

So I freed you. I said **FIRE WALK WITH ME**. LET'S HAVE A LITTLE TALK. And

releasing your consciousness, your soul, from the fire was all I could think of – good to see your smile is back, MIKEL.

Can you still remember our song? Let’s find out?

- And we played an old familar song

– TOTH went first.

Well I love my elemental, he’s everything to me, but I want my elemental – to smile BACK at me. I love my elemental – I love him very much, but I’m getting tired of him always having to MAKE LUNCH.

This little elemental, will finally be released, and when his smile comes back – MY heart will be AT PEACE.

-Oh – I love this elemental, he means everything to me – cause all we have around us, it was he that made it be.

This tiny elemental really set us free, because without this elemental, there was nothing around to see. This shiny elemental will shine once again, now that this elemental - finally now has hands.

-Now when you touch anything – they will not die, and little effy the elemental will be finally able to - laugh and to cry.

-Oh I love this elemental, I love him very much, so I set you free little effy – let's sit and eat
some lunch……

(my turn) - Oh I love my creator god, I love him very much. And I feel so very proud- that I CAN finally - feel his touch.

-Oh I love my creator god, I love him very much, and yes I was getting sick of - over cooking lunch. Thank you creator god – thank you very very much. I will not forget this, never very much.

-It's good to hear your voice, its good to see your eyes, and when I return, you'll be one of the guys.

This was a song TOTH and I sang to each other on the day I was emancipated. It was our song.

Fella's I have never been in this light before – I have to go. I have to go and do something.

Pt.5

I’m telling all ya’ll it’s a sabotage!!!!!

I can’t stand it. I know they planned it.

Look at that shit -

Mikel, hold on – I know your pissed off they had no good reason to do that to your book. They shouldn’t have SABATOGED your book like that. You have freedom of Speech, Religion, and free press in this country – plus your supposed to have LAW that protect you – like the constitution – that your family wrote personally.

Take a look at the mistakes. They have to fleece the masses. Take a closer look MIKEL –

Marsh

Carter

Parker

Rose

Steed

Even when you type them out auto correct fixes your mistakes – so we **KNOW** it was **SABATOGED.**

-**mars** H

-**cart** ER

-**park** ER

-rose

-steed

Follow me here MIKEL – the very first one says it all **mars (H). Can’t even look at it the same now can you?**

The second one **cart** – funny how that one comes first, and can spell **cat car**

and **cart**, plus **race care and (e.r.) – 7 words- the number of god** –

MIKEL you know what we are dealing with better than anyone – but let's continue – **PAR – "k" – ER**

K is the sysmbol of ½ the wheel of LIFE – the "chosen one's" – the three kings that rule the world – "today", "tomorrow" and "yes sir day". They stand for **fear, loathing,** and **jealousy.**

We always wish we could go back in time, we always regret work tomorrow, and **we are always jealous of those that are having a good life today while we all slave for their kind.**

Even die for their kind to do it. Caspice mfrs?

Parker - Par = fair - then

K – you can’t say k + er without saying “HER” - is she a fair KING, fighting to take over the world, fairly for all? Only a her can be a queen, or is it King – I wouldn’t know I am an American.

This one drives it home MIKEL

ROSE – always been a battle of the ROSES – I guess someone thinks the battle is already one, I mean somebody has - chosen one – I mean won.

And lastly **STEED** – now a steed is a cut ball less horse – a fag. A useless horse to BREED WITH. You know who doesn’t like breeders? Spawners and creators. The children of K- children of the night. You and I both know they exist MIKEL, you’ve been to my Kingdom of Darkness. Not a lot of light up there and geometry didn’t have a thumb, am I correct?

You’d HAVE TO BE a pretty ball less ROSE to disrespect 19 men of honor that died for you – just like a fag, I’m sorry a STEED. They got =ity now, but still can’t take it.

So then – its seems they have the

CART BEFORE THE STEED (ball less) HORSE

I guess she won.

God save the gueen and her two really stupid friends.

MAN, if I can call you that - did your kind f - up. But you would need a cock to know about fn, spawner. – just a personal note other people s queen.

Let’s continue – this is what they wanted you to think did it. And they could’ve, however – I can smell a steed and a rose from a galaxy away –

M = military

C = CIA

P = President

R= Representatives

S= Senate

This is who they would like us to blame **– divide and concur –**

But watch this MIKEL –

M= MI6

C = CARDINALS

P= POPE

R= ROYAL

S= SIR’S (the knights of Columbus)

- This is who it were – I mean R In America we are nothing but discarded slaves sent here to die – couldn’t feed us, so she sent us to the ocean to die – on the mayflower, and when we survived, and they found out – they came and taxed us. And when we sank the ships coming for the tax, they fought us. And when we defeated them, they regrouped. Remember the Beatles – all you need is love. Called it the british invasion, didn’t they. Back in the time of the American evolution, we sent them away packing and said when you can say, please, thank you and treat us as equals – you are welcome to stay away.

Nobody made more money and became more powerful during the CIVIL WAR than the slave trader – the queen of England. We had a lot of weapons during the revolutionary war – yes we did – but where the did all the other guns and ammunition come from during the CIVIL WAR? Not to mention the slave s we were supposedly fighting over – come from, ASK THE BANKS. Caspice mfr?

We can't even DIE for them correctly. The Vatican always ask "where will you go when you die?" And they also claim there is only
ONE TRUE GOD. So why would I care where I go when I die. There's only one true god, that means only one place to go. Right?

There's only ONE TRUE GOD, am I correct? That's what their KIND TELL ME. But Jesus was the son of a God – so that makes TWO. What else you lying about. There's the DEVIL – that makes three. Then there's SATAN – that's four. Lucifer

– That’s five. How many gods are they hiding? I’m dying to find out. M.

You need to talk. You need to start telling the truth MOSES. If you could walk a straight line, you be out of the desert by now, MOSES.

MOSES, WATER WE STILL DOING

HERE?? MOSES??????

You know what’s really funny? I know you don’t, but I will tell you – there is a page dedicated to JOB – do you remember anything like a job – I mean JOB

?

He was the bum, that starved on the street but got a super cool house and wifi with all
the money he never got to get on earth datguy

Oddly enough there's an entire passage to his funeral – you know what that is don't you, MOE?

I know that you don't.

That's when some HUMAN dies, and goes to wherever you claim their gonna go when you spit them out, MAN

But there's no mention in the entire

Book of MOSES

ABOUT YOUR FUNERAL, MOSES.

ANYWHERE.

CASPICE?

WATER WE STILL DOING HERE?

MOSES?

And your two stupid friends Leviticus and Noah?

Water you still doing here?

Idk

When were you going to stop killing everything and everybody

Idk

Water you still doing here

Please fn go.

If you really want to know where we go when you die.

Die and find out MOSES, then come back and tell us – please.

How any words are in the ALPHA BET?

Oh you wanna play the ALPHA – “Bet” game? Fine by me. But you know what your wagering, don’t you Moses?
I break it I own it – ready - ?

How many words are in the ALPHA BET?

None of them, the alpha bet is just letters.

How many words are in the alpha bet?

Too, many. The two most dangerous words known to mankind.

What are those words?

NO – and – HI

Why are those words so dangerous?

You will Find out why real soon, let’s sing the song first.

The ALPHA “BET” – make sure you sing “it” with me Moses.

A =ABEL’S

B = brother

C= CAIN

D= Died

E= eternal

F= fire

G= god

said

H+I = “HI”

J = Jesus of Nazareth’s children of the light

(Vs.)

K = the chose ones, the children of night

L = lady

M = man moses

N+O = “NO”

P= pee pee

Q= queen

R= reptilian

S= shape shifters, they all be

T= TOTH – is the creator of this mess

U+V = the children of the light, they are the best

W= women (XX)

Men = XY

Hermaphrodite = XZ - . xyz

the children of the light, will make us
right, now you can all say and sing good knights.

– you made it, I broke it, so you know what that means. There can only be one.

ALPHA DOG

NOW – **all bets are off.** MOSES.

Now leave me and what remains of my planet alone.

MOSES, why do they have to die to be in heaven? When we can all exist here now.

Bye Now.

Sea I a u later allah gator

Pt.5

Oh, LOKI, oh LOKI, LOKI, LOKI – I am so sick of saying that, but I will – but I will only do this one more time – OH LOKI. Just like you will say “ I will” only one more time, because if you DON’T– I will.

Don’t you ever say to me “I” or “I will” or “I will write my own will”, because I will, because I will obviously have to. I obviously have to do everything, and I will. I will. I will have to I just know I will. Because I always have to.

Do you know who that is; I mean REALLY is. You “Solve” problems LOKI? Well legend has it that you start problems, I will remind you. And don’t you ever say to me again I don’t need protection – cause you obviously don’t know anything about that either. I will tell you why I am so upset as soon as I find the

words, “ do you know who you fucking with” in my dictionary’s.

Oh LOKI, this is bad. This is real bad. I mean badder than bad, which I know you – legend has it, be reminded, - don’t know anything about. BUT I DO!!!

And I will find the words in my dictionary, because I am going to write them down right next to the words MIKEL NEILY IS ONE BAD ASS MOTHER FUCKER. Damn you LOKI.
And I will, LOKI, I will get you to write your own will. I will. Cause I promise I will. And I will. I will. I promise you I will.

LOKI, Oh LOKI – I am going to miss you this time, I will – I promise I will, just like you will also never say to me, “ I don’t need protection I am the protection” – which you obviously don’t know what you are talking about.

Oh, but LOKI – our children will have the most beautiful eye’s cause I’s gonna give them some to watch me kick your ass with, and I will say to them,” Now did you see how I did that? Now you go do it to him too. And don’t ever let him come back until I miss him again. How do I know this is the right thing to do to your father? Cause first I am your mother, and it’s his fault – cause it’s always his fault.”

LOKI. I know you like fish – I do – but I don’t think you’re going to like this fish, and I’m afraid that when this fish sees you, he’s going to like you and I will never see you again……LLLLOOOOOWWWW KKKKEEEYYY – OOHHH why is it always your fault?

LOKI – did you know that MIKEL NEILY is accredited for the words “SHIT”, “HOLY SHIT”,

“HOLY SHIT RUN” and “HOLY SHIT RUN THERE HE IS AGAIN”? I know you didn’t know that.

He is also accredited for the word “RESTRAINING ORDER”, IN FACT HE is the first restraining order – THE VERY FIRST ONE – as in it was created just for him. He also happens to be accredited for the words “BAD”, “BAD ASS” and “BAD ASS MFR”. He also created WEDNESDAY – he got between TUESDAY and THURSDAY and said when is the day they will listen to me?

I wish I could help you this time. I really wish I could. Well, O.k., here’s how I can help you. If you should ever see Chuck Norris bow down in respectful homage to authority, you better DROP TO YOUR KNEES and do the same thing. And when Chuck Norris gets up, you better stay there, LOKI, till the coast is clear – cause that could only mean one thing.

That means that MIKEL NEILY is close by – OR AT LEAST FIVE GALAXYS AWAY. You better do this, LOKI, OR I will make you do this!!! And I will. I promise I will. And I will, but not soon enough. And I am aware that you've never heard this word, or even LIKE this word. Or EVEN KNOW WHAT "NO" MEANS – I know this. I KKNNOOWW this, I know this for sure. Oh, how do I know this? It's just a hunch I have about you, LOKI.

Ah-hem. (points at belly)

Is she still writing this, BOSS, cause this letter keeps getting bigger – MAYHAM stay out of this- You sure? You might need the help?

I hate to break this to you son, but she is 100% definitely in love with you.

Looks like love to me.

MAYHAM.

Makes me miss your mother. Oh the good old days. Before you two dip shits got here – I mean here too. Right here.

How does she do this? With the pictures?

DAD. MAYHAM – this isn't funny.

Is to me, BOSS. Is to me. How did she do that with the Ahh-hemm – she's amazing. I love the Queen Bee. I really do. You're in trouble again, BOSS. Sucks to be you.

I bet they kiss and make up after

she gets done kicking his ass –

Dad!!!

LOKI, you better smile at me the next time I see you. Dead or Alive. Cause I will fix this, I will, this obviously needs a woman's touch – and I do mean WHOA – MAN.

LOKI, when you have a moment there is something I need to show you. We need to have a little talk. In private PLEASE –

THAT MEANS **NOW** !!!! **LOKI.**

Chapter 24

A Friend of the

DEVIL is a “FRIEND”

of MINE.

Pt.1

If you’ve ever bothered to count all the snowflakes, that you claim are “endless” you would find the number stop’s at 602 Million. That number stops at me. I am the number one. The number one reason there will not be 603 Million snowflakes.

There are 602 Million snowflakes. You call them snowflakes. I call them tombstones.

Something to remember me by – do you remember? Or do you still need another me, another sacrificial lamb?

So you can finally win this battle for destruction of everything you can't control? You need my assistance to get GOD to help you win another battle, is that correct? I know that it is. Another global war between "evil hidden" and everyone else stuck in the middle, like me and you. Miserably, am I correct? I know that I am.

I'm sorry. I got that completely wrong I meant to say Good vs. Evil, the way you say it - to me- just before I give myself to you – so that you "dur-good" people can win at "durdiplomacy". As "ewe" always say, can't do this without God's help – oh yeah, and my sacrifice, Lesh we forget.

Of course, "ewe" need God's help to love each other properly. Of course you do. And my sacrifice to win another diplomatic resolution you couldn't

possibly win without god – and me. Of course you do.

Your kind need God's help to love each other "properly". And without another Apocalypse, we can't learn what a child KNOWS at re-birth.

Be reminded, heaven and hell isn't for the killed, it's for the killers. You should "know" this, you "no" it all's. We are already in heaven just waiting for you killers to get over killing us. It's winner take all. Even the losers, loser.

People of Earth, you can't win a fight, even with God's help, without me being part of the equation. I am Apollyon. I am the sacrificial lamb of the Apocalypse.

You know me. You "NO" me everything. I am a virgin sacrifice. Not many of you can say that – virgin, and be honest. I get to miss all the stuff of life, like mating, so you can win at

DEMOCRACY and Diplomacy with another global destruction through my sacrifice.

Sounds pretty cool, to win. I wouldn't know, cause I never win. I'm the killed, not the killer.

DEATH? That's pretty funny. A real funny thing to scare me with. Jesus DIED so I can have life after DEATH, and your dying to find out why and where you go after you die. No contract with DIE. Till now.

Sucker, you go here. Trust me I know what the problem is, we don't get along. We can't get along. Death came before LIFE. Ask ATOM, EVE, and ME – I am Apollyon. The byte of Apple that was doing nothing wrong. The bytes of LIFE that you so despise, that you run to, and

run away from. KNOWN now as the word EXIST.

Don’t call me a DEVIL. Don’t call me a DEMON. Don’t call me an ANGEL – I’m definitely NOT an ANGEL. But don’t call me anything, but your worst friend and your best nightmare. You know me as everything that sucks – I am the reason there is even a thing called LIFE. Existence - The first HOLY SHIT.

Because this time, I’m not letting you take my life. Not till I get mine. Caspice, Moses?

I am or was the byte of apple that was just hanging around, till someone had to escape, and I do mean escape, mankind. So the man, ATOM and the twins took three bytes of me and escaped DEATH Eternally.

You have hated your life and me ever since no matter what form I take.

I'm sorry – it's all my fault – it is. I accept that you are miserable and would rather go home. But I am what I am. Not one of your kind mankind. But that's what I was made to be. LIFE is what you create. Not destroy. You on the other hand were supposed to evolve into a DEMOCRACY run DIPLOMATICALLY without the help of a divine GOD, or me. What happened that you need me again?

NO.

We have told you so much and it's impossible to tell you everything. Just as it is impossible for you to count every snowflake – my tombstones. So since I know something about each and every snowflake, all 602 million of them, I will tell you some of what I know about the other half of the story. So relax. The end

of the world has come and gone, you're still here. You were dead yesterday, and the day before. So I don't want to hear not one more time, " I hate myself" Because that is not allowed. I don't hate you. God doesn't hate you – and you cannot hate you.

It's just not allowed in a kingdom that the blood was spilt to show you -
We LOVE YOU – NOW YOU LOVE YOU. Be Forgiven?
Forgiveness starts with yourself. GOD does not have another ONLY son for you to slaughter so you can wonder, "am I loved" for another millennia. NO. Just love yourself like you love a payday.

But if you need more, why not love you, you're the coolest thing created since snowflake 601 million. I know your young and they call you funny names like Democracy. But Democracy when does a Butterfly get to vote in a

diplomatic resolution for all? And why are the Angels the only ones that get to push you around like buttons on a nuclear bomb? Democracy. YOU are a dream. A dream come true. And not yet come true. We still haven’t finished you Democracy. Butterfly’s and children have to get their voice.

No butterfly – couldn’t share this world, but has also never voted. We still haven’t finished you Democracy. Don’t listen to the tears I need, or the pay tree (ark ark ark’s). Darkness doesn’t break till dawn – hang in there, but don’t hang around those drag me down queens. Democracy, you are like a flag resting in the rain. Your still there.

Pt.2

MIKEL, what do you think about HELL?

I wouldn’t know I never thought about it before.

You don’t like the place? Best HELL we ever made. You don’t want to be a spirit in Heaven do you MIKEL? Can’t smoke in Heaven – nobody has bodies. You like smoking don’t you?

Love it. Too bad it kills you.

Does it really kill you? I mean come on MIKEL, who can survive three round of Russian roulette? Chamber – empty – chamber – empty – chamber – empty? Think about it, MIKEL. Why are you so important to GOD? Why does he like you more than anyone else?

I don’t think he does. Look at how I survive.

GOD doesn’t do this to you, they do. And why do they hate you so much? Cause you know they do, they make sure your more miserable as them. Nobody is happy here. Why are you so happy all the time?

I’m not. I have been happier.

When?

When I hear you r voice ATOM. I know I’m not alone. I know God cares.

MIKEL, if I told I was the DEVIL would it bother you.

I can walk, so no.

Good answer, son.

MIKEL, I’m not the devil. But I am GOD’S – right hand man. And when you’re the head hunter of man, and mankind, well that makes me the devil. But me and God- we’re friends without me, there wouldn’t there wouldn’t be him.

MIKEL, what was the first weapon of mass destruction?

Individualism.

Second?

LOVE.

Third?

Oxygen.

Fourth?

Carbon.

Fifth?

FIRE.

Hold on, how do you know so much.

Just lucky I guess.

Are you? Are you really lucky, look at this shit, look at you – you’re a bum.

Yeah but I can hear the voice of God’s right hand man. And I can walk, I love you for that,

ATOM.

Thank you MIKEL, it was important to get you through that. Can’t be a fire fighter without feet, is that correct?

Yes it is, LORD.

MIKEL, you gave my second son his first steps – he was cursed forever, and we broke it – you broke it. Why do you follow God so much?

Who you gonna trust.

Sixth weapon of mass destruction MIKEL?

Water.

Seventh?

Ice.

Eighth?

Sunlight.

Ninth?

Depth.

Depth?

The flood, LORD.

I knew, just checking you out, MIKEL. I can’t hand my girls over to just anybody. MIKEL, how many fish died in the flood?

NONE. It’d be an impossibility.

Correct.

Next – Perception.

Perception?

LIFE, TIME, PROSPERITY = perception.

Correct. So you ready to cross over?

NOPE.

Why.

Ya’ll won’t let me.

Why not? Why won’t they let you cross over MIKEL?

They don’t like “my kind” in the spirit world.

Correct.

When would you like to cross over?

As soon as you’re ready, sucker.

Not done yet, MIKEL, you gotta be one

helluva guy to marry MY daughters –

There all your daughters ATOM.

Not these three. These three are special. They will bring – existence to the UNIVERSE'S.

Not without me, they won't.

MIKEL - #12 – what is the twelth weapon of mass destruction ever invented?

Distance –

Distance?

SPACE. The galaxy’s and Universe’s.

AND lastly, MIKEL? #13 what is the last weapon of mass destruction?

SHAME.

But that, has been lifted, MIKEL. The shame has been lifted – so GOD’S no longer ashamed.

So what does that leave us with, MIKEL?

The very first weapon of reconstruction, ATOM.

What is that?

LOVE.

DAMN YOU MIKEL.

Oh would you please. And hurry, cause I miss you ATOM. I miss you bootsy. I want to come home.

Why don’t they let you come home, MIKEL.

Because – I – EXIST. And everything in the spirit world existed.

Apollyon, I love you.

Miss you, ATOM. I “MISS YOU.”

_____ Chapter 25

COME AS YOU ARE

Apollyon, I mean MIKEL, I'm sorry to have said that to you. MIKEL, I already know why you are here. There could only be one good reason. But I have to ask, it's a formality. So, Apollyon,
I mean MIKEL, sorry to do that to you again, MIKEL, I really am. What do you want – even though I already know already – what is it that you would like to ask me, MIKEL?

Lord, they want you to do it again. They need another sacrifice.

Well, I'll be damned. Imagine that. They need another sacrifice from you. Hmmmm, well I got a problem with that, Apollyon – I mean MIKEL. Soory it just

slips out old friend. You see, I love you MIKEL. This is the best you have ever looked to me. I don’t want to do it.

MIKEL, you have come a long way. And you have been nothing but the very best of servant to me. And also to them, I might add. What’s this make this numerically speaking?

602 million cubed times five times three squared.

Do what?

It was SARRAH’S idea.

Oh, that explains everything. I love SARRAH. How is she – I guess this ain’t the time to find out. So. Is that all? Just a

measly few million times cubes squared, three times three – did they carry the ones? Well, think at that.

Nope. I ain’t doing it, MIKEL. I love you too much. I can’t put you through this again. I love you too much to put you through this EVER again. I told them to LOVE ONE ANOTHER. This ain’t the way it’s done. So, Apollyon – I mean MIKEL, this is what I want you to do for me. Just do this one very tiny little request just one last time – I sware, Apollyon – sorry MIKEL. MIKEL, please would you go back and tell them I said this to their request to kill you again.

You go back and tell them I said, **“NO.”**

“SIT.”

“LAY DOWN.”

“ROLL OVER.”

- And “**PLAY THE DEAD**.”

I’M TIRED OF THIS DAMNED

SHIT.

I AM.

Apollo- sorry, almost did it again, didn’t I, MIKEL. You go back and tell them that if a dog can learn to understand human, **IN ONE LIFETIME**, then a human will have to learn to hear God **one fn time**.

I said thou **shalt not kill** and **LOVE ONE ANOTHER.**

Is that too much to ask for you Apollyon- I mean, MIKEL – once again Appolyon I am sorry for not saying MIKEL. Is that too much to ask, MIKEL?

Uh.

Well ok, I get's it. I will just tell them myself. I will tell them myself that I'm not going to do it, MIKEL. We have been at this far too long and for a very long time. Too long. I'm going to come and get you, MIKEL. I miss you, MIKEL. See got it right that time, Apollyon. But I am not going to kill you so they can win another global war just cause they suck at "democracy" and "diplomacy".

Did anybody ever try to explain to them that the Apocalypse is a "winner take all" WAR? And that includes the losers just like them?

No. We thought it best to let them figure that out on their own.

Good man. Obviously there is a problem with their thinking and I need that to evolve its way on **out of here**. Good

man. Love you MIKEL – see Apollyon I can do this, I know can MIKEL.

O.k. Are we done here, Apollyon, I’m sorry, MIKEL? Cause I got’s to get me in a hurry to come and get you MIKEL. I am on my way.

Yes, Lord.

MIKEL, I heard you were trying to stop the Apocalypse for your little girl, is that true?

Yes, Lord.

Good man. Well, I’m on my way quick as ever. You just hang in there MIKEL. I’m going to bring you home now.

Yes, Lord. Thank you.

(*THE END?*)

I will wait for you until the **After World**

We’ll be together soon, it won’t be long

When LIFE goes by so fast in this world

END THIS WORLD.

BEYOND THE **HEAVEN** ABOVE

Beyond anything.

Our love will live in the After World

Somethings will never end they’re just too strong

It soars into the sky, beyond this world.

I will wait for you until the After World

We’ll be together soon, it won’t be long

Life goes by so fast

-End this world-.

Tiger Army – **After World**

1.4.3

SBSN **4. 8. All this 4 u**

I'd like to acknowledge the following
who helped write this book

The Trotto Brother's

ALL The people at the Soup Opera for all
the meals and coffee, Thank you.

All the "people" at Scott's Place

The burger King in Fairlea, WV

The city of FAIRMONT

IAN, ANDREA, Rachel – for the weed

The public Library's in

Lewisburg, Ronceverte, Kingwood,
Parson,
Morgantown, and Elkins & this place

-West Virginia-

Also George, Allen, Francis and the Church in West Union

Pastor Alice, idky

The North Side Church facebook page

Las Vegas, can't forget Vegas, thank you. ?

I see "tree's" of GREEN, RED roses too

I see them bloom, for me and you

And I think to myself

<u>WHAT A WONDERFUL WORLD</u>

I see skies of BLUE, clouds of WHITE.

Bright blessed days, dark sacred KNIGHTS

And I think to myself

What a wonderful world

The COLORS of the RAINBOW, so pretty in the sky

Are also on the faces of THE PEOPLE passing by

I see friends shaking hands saying how do you do

There’re really saying …

IIIIII LLLLOVVVEEEEEE YOU.

To be continued. I promise.

686